# Selections From The Great Exposition of the Stages of the Path To Enlightenment

By

Dzong-ka-ba Lo-sang-drak-ba

Fulfilling The Prerequisites For Special Insight:
Identifying Scripture Requiring Interpretation and Scriptures of Definitive Meaning,
The History of Commentary on Nāgārjuna's Thought, and
How to Settle the View of Emptiness

Translated by Elizabeth Napper

How To Train In Special Insight: Fulfilling The Prerequisites For Special Insight by Dzong-ka-ba Lo-sang-drak-ba

Translated by Elizabeth Napper © by Elizabeth Napper, 1995-2005. No portion may be reproduced by any means without written permission.

This dual language edition was prepared by Craig Preston for use in Tibetan and English language classes. It is not intended for general circulation or publication. No portion may be reproduced by any means without prior written permission from the copyright holder.

Dual Language ver 1.1, January, 2007. Dual Language ver 1.2, September, 2009.

Bracked page numbers, i.e., [564], are to the edition published by the Tso Ngön (Qinghai) People's Press in 1985, and also used by the Lamrim Chenmo Translation Committee.

### Contents of Great Special Insight

|    | [Introduction]   | 5     |
|----|--|-------|
|    | [Chapter 1. The Interpretable and the Definitive]  | 12    |
|    | [1/4] Fulfilling The Prerequisites For Special Insight   |       |
| 5  | [1/3 First: Identifying Scriptures Requiring Interpretation and Scriptures of Definitive Meaning]              |       |
|    | [Chapter 2. Reliable Sources]  | 20    |
|    | [2/3] Second: The History of Commentary of Nāgārjuna's Thought   |       |
|    | [Chapter 3. The Stages of Entry Into Suchness]   | 25    |
|    | [3/3] Third: How To Settle The View Of Emptiness   |       |
| 10 | [1/2] One: [The Stages of Entry Into Suchness]   | 25    |
|    | [Chapter 4. Misidentifying the Object of Negation]   | 36    |
|    | [2/2] Two: Actual Settling of Suchness   | 36    |
|    | [1/3] Identifying The Object Of Negation By Reasoning  | 36    |
|    | [1/3 The Reason Why it is Necessary to Identify Well the Object of Negation]                                   |       |
| 15 | [2/3] Second, Refuting Other Systems which [engage in] Refutation without having Identified Object of Negation |       |
|    | [Chapter 5. The Uncommon Feature of Mādhyamika]  | 42    |
|    | [2/2] Second: Showing That Those [Assertions] Are Incorrect  |       |
|    | [1/2] First, showing that those systems refute the uncommon distinguishing feature of Mādhyamil                |       |
| 20 | [1/3] First, [Identifying the Distinguishing Feature of Mādhyamika]  |       |
|    | [Chapter 6. Dependent-Arising and Emptiness]   | 53    |
|    | [2/3] Second, How Those Systems Refute This [Distinguishing Feature of Madhyamika]                             |       |
|    | [Chapter 7. Madhyamika Response]   | 68    |
|    | [3/3] Third, How a Madhyamika responds to those [who refute the distinguishing feature of                      |       |
| 25 | Madhyamika]  | 68    |
|    | [Chapter 8. Reasoned Analysis]   |       |
|    | [2/2] Second, showing that the discredit expressed does not overwhelm [our position]                           | 94    |
|    | [1/4. Conventional phenomena, forms and so forth] cannot be overcome through a refutation upon                 |       |
|    | investigating whether they can or cannot withstand analysis by reasoning.]                                     | 94    |
| 30 | [Chapter 9. Valid Establishment]   |       |
|    | [2/4] Second, [conventional phenomena, forms and so forth] cannot be overcome through a negation               |       |
|    | upon investigating whether they are or are not established by valid cognition                                  | 108   |
|    | [Chapter 10. Conventional Existence]   | . 134 |

|    | [Chapter 11. Production Is Not Refuted]  | 148 |
|----|--|-----|
|    | [3/4] Third, Indicating That [The Existence Of Production And So Forth] Cannot Be Overcome       |     |
|    | Through A Refutation Upon Investigating Whether There Is Or Is Not Production Of The Four        |     |
|    | Alternatives   | 148 |
| 5  | [4/4] Fourth, Indicating That The Refutation Of All Four Alternatives—The Existence, Non-Existen | ce, |
|    | And So Forth Of Things—Is Not Suitable To Overcome [The Conventional Existence Of Production     | n   |
|    | And So Forth]  | 156 |
|    | [Chapter 12. Not Negating Enough]  | 160 |
|    | [2/2] Second, Refuting A Too Limited Identification Of The Object To Be Negated                  |     |
| 10 | [Chapter 13. The Actual Object to be Negated]  | 184 |
|    | [3/3] Third, Identifying The Object To Be Negated In Our Own System                              |     |
|    | [1/3] First, The Actual Identification Of The Object Of Negation                                 |     |
|    | [Chapter 14. When Qualification Is Needed]   | 211 |
|    | [2/3] Second, How These [Qualifications Such As Inherently] Are Or Are Not Affixed To Other Ob   |     |
| 15 | To Be Negated  |     |
|    | [3/3] Third, An Explanation Of Whether Or Not The Qualification "Ultimately" Needs To Be Affix   |     |
|    | To The Object To Be Negated  |     |

#### [Introduction]

5

10

20

25

## 

How to Train in the Entity of Wisdom, Special Insight, through Training in the Bodhisattva Deeds, from among the Stages of the Paths of Beings of Great Capacity

As was explained earlier, you should not be satisfied with a mere calm abiding that possesses the feature of

- (1) non-conceptuality, that is, the mind's staying in accordance with your wish on the single object of meditation on which it has been set, whereby it stays where it is placed,
- (2) clarity which is free from laxity,
- (3) benefit, that is, joy and bliss.

### दे।विंत्रिक्तिन्त्रीर्द्विक्तिःअर्थिम्यम्यम्देश्यदेश्विष्टम्यामञ्जूतिक्षास्यामञ्जूतिक्षान्त्रम्य

Rather having generated the wisdom that ascertains non-erroneously the meaning of suchness, you should cultivate special insight.

Otherwise, since such mere meditative stabilization is shared with Forders, no matter how much you cultivate that mere [meditative stabilization], you will not be released from mundane existence in just the same way as the seeds of the afflictions are not abandoned thought the paths of [Forders].

### ने सुरायदार्श्वेयार्देयान्दार्याः यश्

The first of Kamalashila's [three works on the] Stages of Meditation says:

### 

Having thus made the mind steady with respect to an object of observation, one should analyze with wisdom.

### तर्ने :कृरः क्षेत्रायते :कृरः या शुरायत्रा गुताः हुई त्रायते :त्रायंत्रः क्षेत्रः हुई त्यरः तशुरार्दे ।

For, though the arising of the illumination of knowledge, the seeds of obscuration are thoroughly abandoned.

### 

If this is not done, then just like the Forders, one cannot abandon the afflictions through mere meditative stabilization.

### यर्ने श्रेष्यश्रह स्नुन्तु

दिवाःहेवः नवाःवेः नेनः वहेवः क्षें यः चेनः ग्रानः । ने वेः विन्तं वाः तिः विन्नः विन्य

बेशमञ्जूदश्रायाक्षातुर्देः

#### ন্বসাম্ব্রমার্মা ।

[The King of Meditative Stabilizations] Sūtra says:

Although worldly persons cultivate meditative stabalization, They do not destroy the discrimination of self. For them the afflictions return and disturb [the mind], Just as Udraka cultivated meditative stabilization here.

# ने'त्य'हेट'तहें मुंभा होन्'गुट'बेमाय'में इस्यायम्'यि हो हें माय'न्यम्भयाय'य'र्भम्भायते'हुन्'यर'न्य'य्व'यते हेट'दे'तहें म

20 عُمْ ا

25

5

10

15

[In the scripture cited above] the phrase, "although [worldly persons] cultivate meditative stabilization" means "although [persons] cultivate a meditative stabilization possessing the features of non-conceptuality, clarity, and so forth as explained before.

### देपङ्ग्रींस**रा**गुरायद्वारद्विरञ्जेरासीतुर्यायादी। देवीयद्वार्त्वातृत्वदुःविरादद्विवासीग्रीद्वेद्वा । उर्वायदेश ।

The phrase, "They do not destroy the discrimination of self," means that although they cultivate such, they cannot abandon the conception of self.

### 

The fact that the afflictions will still be generated due to not having abandoned the conception of self is indicated by "the afflictions return and disturb [the mind]".

Through what sort of cultivation is liberation attained? Immediately following [the above passage], the scripture, as was cited earlier, says:

If selflessness is analyzed with respect to phenomena

[And if one meditates in accordance with that individual analysis,

This is the cause of the fruit, the attainment of nirvana.

There is no peace through any other cause].

5

10

15

20

### डेबार्खेग्बाहे ग्रायाहे प्रदिगां के न्याये केंबाया केंबिन प्रमुख्य क्यायन्य का किन्या के निवास के कि का स्वापन

[The first line means], "If having analyzed individually phenomena which are selfless, one generates the wisdom understanding the meaning of selflessness...".

### र्बे कें र दे पह ग्रामाय के प्रक्षें अपि है।

### बेशयन्यासेन्यदेख्याहेन्त्रश्राचाहेन्त्रश्राचाने हेन्

[The second line,] "If one meditates [in accordance with] that individual analysis," refers to sustaining and meditatively cultivating the view of selflessness that had been gained.

### दे<sup>-</sup>वे-भु-दव-दद्य-विकास्तिः

### बेबासुर्द्वायकायद्वायवस। वरायदेरद्वायातुर्वेदायदेर्सुदेर्धेवर्त्वेद्वायदे ।

[The third line,] That is the cause of the fruit, the attainment of nirvāṇa" means that such is the cause of attaining the fruit which is nirvāṇa, or liberation.

### र्देन्द्रेन् पङ्केंस्रस्य प्रस्व स्याप्तर्वे प्राया सूर्य देसे द्राया मानद्राने मानद्वे स्वया स्वया स्वया सूर्य स्व

Can liberation be attained through cultivating some other path without that [wisdom realizing selflessness] in the way in which it is attained through cultivating it?

### क्युःमाल्वनःमादःधीवःदेशःवेःवीदःश्रेःदशुद्र।।

### बेशने'यशम्बन्यति'यशम्ब्र्ह्मिश्चर्यान्द्र्मेश्चर्यान्दर्भवान्द्रम्यान्द्रम्यान्दर्भवान्दर्भवान्दर्भवान्दर्भवान्दर्भव

[The fourth line of the above scripture] says, "There is no peace through any other cause", meaning that although one cultivates a path which is other than that [of the wisdom of selflessness, without that, [wisdom] there is no pacification of suffering and the afflictions.

10

15

यद्गासेद्रायदेःविश्वास्यार्वित् श्चेद्रायदेः स्याग्रेंद्राचेद्रात्ते त्रुत्तित् त्रुत्तात्रक्षेत्रायदे त्रुत्य यद्गासेद्रायदे विश्वास्यार्वे त्रुत्यायस्य

This scripture teaching very clearly that only the wisdom of selflessness severs the root of mundane existence was quoted in [Kamalashila's] *Mādhyamika Stages of Meditation* in order to damage [the assertions of the Chinese abbot] Hva-shang.

यदीःयादेश्वायाङ्केदादर्भेश्वात्राष्ट्रीत्रात्र्येत्रात्र्यात्र्येत्रात्त्र्यश्चात्र्यत्त्र्यत्त्र्यत्त्र्यत्त्र विदायाद्यत्याक्षेत्रायते भ्रायाक्षेत्रायश्चात्रेत्रायायश्चात्र्यत्त्र्यत्त्र्यत्त्र्यत्त्र्यत्त्र्यत्त्र्यत्त्र

Therefore, you need to gain ascertainment with respect to this, for although even the Forder sages have many good qualities such as meditative stabilization, the clairvoyances, and so forth, since they do not have the view of selflessness, they cannot cross beyond cyclic existence even a little.

વૃષ્ઠ-१.५८% ત્રાપ્ત વૃષ્ઠ-१.५८% ત્રાપ્ત વૃષ્ઠ-१.५८% ત્રાપ્ત વૃષ્ઠ-૧.५८% ત્રાપ્ત વૃષ્ઠ-૧.૧૯% ત્રાપ્ત વૃષ્ઠ-૧.૧૯% ત્રાપત વૃષ્ઠ-

In this way, the Scriptural Collection of Bodhisattvas, which was sited earlier says that:

One who, without knowing the meaning of suchness as explained in the scriptures, is satisfied with mere meditative stabilization might develop manifest pride [mistaking] that for the path cultivating the profound meaning. Through that, such a person is not released from cyclic existence.

दशदेःयःदर्गेदश्वतश्चावतःयशर्वेशयःवे क्वःवे त्यशर्वेयःयम् व्याप्तः स्वाप्तः स्वाप्तः स्वाप्तः स्वाप्तः स्वाप्तः

I, thinking that, said that one who hears another will be released from aging and death.

20 ब्रेसार्झ्न्यास्य म्बेसास्य म्बेस्यास्य स्थान्य स्

The Teacher himself explains clearly [i.e., interprets] his own thought [when he earlier made the statement that one who hears another will be released from aging and death. Buddha explains that] "hear another" means to hear the explanation of selflessness from another.

25 देश्च भ्रिष्ठ श्वाप्त वेश्व प्रति वेश्व श्वाप्त प्रति प्रति प्रति प्रति प्रति भ्रिष्ठ प्रति प्रति

Therefore it is unquestionable that Buddha said "hears another," in order to stop the conception that [the profound view] is generated naturally without the hearing and thinking involved in listening to the meaning of selflessness from an external holy spiritual guide.

In general, of all the Conqueror's scriptures, some teach suchness directly and even those that do not directly teach it indirectly only flow to and descend into it.

5 दे वित्त नेश्वादि श्वदादा आधुदादा प्रति स्वादि स्वादाद स्वादाद स्वादाद स्वादाद स्वादेश विद्याद स्वाद्य स्वादाद स्वा

Since the darkness of obscuration is not overcome until the illumination of the knowledge of suchness arises, but is overcome when that arises, through mere calm abiding which is a one pointedness of mind there is no pure exalted wisdom and the darkness of obscuration is also not overcome.

10 देते ख्वेर देश्वेर देश्वर वास्त्र विश्वर विश्वर विश्वर वास्त्र विश्वर विश्वय विश्वर विश्वय विश्वय

Therefore, you should unquestionably seek wisdom thinking, "I will seek the wisdom ascertaining the meaning of selflessness-suchness." Kamalashila's middle *Stages of Meditation* says:

15

20

25

नेत्रस्ति प्रविश्वास्त्रस्य प्रश्चे सर्देव स्त्रस्य प्रश्चे प्रति स्त्रस्य प्रश्चे स्तर्भ स्त्रस्य स्त्रस्य

Then, having achieved calm abiding you should cultivate special insight, and should think," All the sayings of the Supramundane Victor were spoken well; they all manifestly illuminate suchness directly or indirectly and flow to suchness.

दे।क्रिंत्रक्षित्रक्ष्यायाञ्चरायश्चरत्रक्ष्यायायश्चर्यायाचित्रत्तुःस्रायतेःद्वायायश्चरत्त्वयायश्चर्याः

If one knows suchness, one will be separated from all nets of views, just as darkness is cleared away though the arising of illumination.

त्वे ग्वत्र अर्थः श्रीकार्त्र त्यो क्षात्र ग्वायमः श्रीः त्यश्चमः विद्याः । क्षेत्र प्यत्य स्वतः क्षेत्र प्यतमः श्रीः त्यश्च स्व

Through mere calm abiding there is no pure exalted wisdom, and also the darkness of the obstructions is not cleared

नेबारमा ग्रीबारे विंतु खेन्बायर मर्बेबबात खे नेबाद्वयायर द्वायर द्वाया । दे विंतु हेन्बायर द्वाया

However, if, with wisdom, one meditates on suchness well, there will be very pure exalted wisdom and suchness will be realized.

### नेशन्यार्वेवशञ्चीयायायदाद्याः [567]यमञ्चेदायमायगुमाने।

Only through wisdom are the obstructions thoroughly abandoned.

### दे १% त्रकात प्रत्या मीकाले मात्रकार्या मात्रका हो भीका स्या ग्रीका दे १विंग्त विंग्त का क्षाप्य के या प्रति ।

Therefore, I, abiding in calm abiding, will, by means of wisdom, thoroughly seek suchness.

I will not be satisfied with mere calm abiding."

### लेशक्षा

5

10

20

25

What is this suchness? Ultimately all things are just empty of the two selves-of persons and phenomena.

### <u>दे!स्व.क्षेट्रदे!लट.लट.क्षेत्रस्थक.मी.वट.वश्चेट्रमीय.क्षेत्रमीय.स्व</u>

Form among the perfections, suchness is realized by the perfection of wisdom.

# यश्रमात्रवात्रात्रात्र्यात्रात्र्यात्रात्र्यात्रात्र्यात्रात्र्यात्रात्र्यात्रात्र्यात्रात्र्यात्र्यात्र्यात्र प्रमात्रम्

Since it cannot be generated by concentration and so forth, you should, without mistaking mere concentration for the perfection of wisdom, generate wisdom.

#### <u>বর্গীহয়৻বর্গীঝ'ঝয়৸</u>

The Sutra Unraveling the Thought says:

चर्डें अ'ख़्ब'त्द्बा'चुद'सुच'बेसबा'द्रपबा'र्केबा'कुसबा'ग्री'र्दे चें'केद'सा'सिकेबा'य'केद'ख'र्दे त्य'त्तृ'द्वीव'य'ग्नद'ग्नीबा'तहेंब'य'

#### ঝগ্ৰহা

"Supramundane Victor, through what perfection should a Bodhisattva apprehend just the non-entityness of phenomena?"

## য়ৣয়ॱয়য়য়য়য়য়৻ঢ়য়ৼয়ৣয়৻ঀয়য়য়য়য়য়ৢঢ়য়ৢয়য়য়৻ঢ়য়ৢয়

#### নিখাই

"Avalokiteshvara, it should be apprehended though the perfection of wisdom."

5 Thinking this, the Sutra of Cultivating Faith in the Mahayana, quoted earlier, says that:

If they do not abide in wisdom, I do not say that those who have faith in the Bodhisattva Mahayana are delivered, no matter how much they engage in the Mahayana.

### [Chapter 1. The Interpretable and the Definitive]

[567.13] ବି'ଞ୍ଚୟ'ବ'୩ବିଷ'ପ'ଞ୍ଗ'ଅଞିଦ'ଦ'ସ୍ଥୁପ'ପରି'ଝ୍ଡ''''ପରି । ହୁମ୍'ଅଞିଦ'୩ ଓଁମ୍ୟରି'' ହୁମ'ଅଞିଦ'ମି' ହୁମ'ଅଞିଦ'ମ୍ୟରି'' ହୁମ'ଅଞ୍ଜିମ'ଅଞ୍ଜିମ'ୟରି'' ହୁମ'ଅଞିଦ'ମ୍ୟରି'' ହୁମ'ଅଞିଦ'ମ୍ୟରି'' ହୁମ'ଅଞ୍ଜିଅଞ୍ଜିମ'ଅଞ୍ଜ

Since this is so, [that is, since it is the case that mere calm abiding is not sufficient and special insight is needed], with respect to the second, how to train in special insight, there are four parts: fulfilling the prerequisites for special insight, the divisions of special insight, how to cultivate special insight in meditation, and the measure of having achieved special insight through meditative cultivation.

### **५**८:सॅंबे।

5

[1/4] Fulfilling The Prerequisites For Special Insight

10 गुर्सुर स्वा ग्री मुत्र दुवित के सार्येग प्यस्य सिव्य प्यति स्वायस्थित प्यायस्थेत त्र सारी सासे द प्यति मुत्र दि स्वाय स्वा

Relying on scholars who know non-erroneously the essentials of the scriptures, you should hear the stainless textual systems.

ર્વેશ્વાયાન્દ્રાન્યશ્ચશ્ચાયતે ત્રેશ્વાયન ગીશ્વાને વિલ્ફાન જેને ફેંગ્યાયતે ભ્રાનાન ક્રેના પાર્વે ભ્રામાં સર્વે ત્રામાં સુધાન સ્થિત ત્રામાં સુધાન સુધ સુધાન સુધ

The generation of the view realizing suchness by means of the wisdoms of hearing and thinking is the indispensable prerequisite for special insight, for, if you do not have a view decisive with respect to the meaning of the mode of being [i.e., emptiness], you cannot generate the special insight realizing the mode [of being of phenomena, emptiness].

दे त्य चित्र प्राप्त प्राप्त प्राप्त के प्र

Also, such a view must be sought by one who, without relying on [scriptures] whose meaning requires interpretation, relies on those of definitive meaning. Therefore, you must understand the meaning of scriptures of definitive meaning through having come to know the difference between that requiring interpretation and the definitive.

यदीष्य स्थान स्था

Furthermore, if you do not rely on treatises which are commentaries on [Buddha's] thought by the great valid openers of the chariot-ways, you are like a blind person without a guide going in the direction of fright. Hence, you must rely on non-erroneous commentaries on [Buddha's thought].

हे'रद्'च'बैब्ग्'य'चहेब'चर'चु'चर्दे'द्ब्यंद्य'दब्रेव्य'च'ब्री

5

10

20

On what sort of commentator on [Buddha's] thought should you depend?

Since the superior Nāgārjuna, renowned in the three levels [below, above and on the earth], was very clearly prophesized by Buddha, the Supramundane Victor, himself in many sutras and tantras as commenting on the profound meaning free from all extremes of existence and non-existence, the essence of the teaching, you should seek the view realizing emptiness based on his texts.

15 दिने त्याम श्रुश इत्तर्दिश दिन देश दिवा श्री माश्चर स्वार्देश प्रश्चा स्वार्थ प्रश्चा स्वार्थ प्रश्चा स्वार्थ स्वर्थ स्वार्य स्वार्थ स्वार्थ स्वार्य स्वार्थ स्वार्थ स्वार्थ स्वार

With respect to these [prerequisites for special insight], there are three parts:

- Identifying scripture requiring interpretation and scriptures of definitive meaning,
- The history of commentary on Nāgārjuna's thought, and
- How to settle the view of emptiness.

### **५८:सॅंबि**।

[1/3 First: Identifying Scriptures Requiring Interpretation and Scriptures of Definitive Meaning]

### 

Those who wish to realize suchness must rely on the Conqueror's scriptures.

# 5 मुश्रुदःस्यःगुदःमृत्यःगुःश्वःर्क्षेम्श्रःगुःयश्वश्यःयदेःद्यदःमीश्वश्वःर्क्षेम्श्रःयःधेवःयश्वःहःदर्यःविमायःयहेवःवश्वःवयःर्वेदःर्द्वः यर्द्यःयसःगुःश्वश्वःव।

However, due to the various thoughts of trainee's, the scriptures vary. Hence you might wonder in dependence on what sort [of scripture] you should seek the meaning of the profound.

### देशपदि दें तम्भी मासुद रस्य या यहेत त्र शहे विंत के दि महिमास प्राप्त के स्थापित है ।

Suchness should be realized through reliance upon scriptures of definitive meaning.

### वें व है 'दर् 'च 'बैगा देश' र्देव 'दर है 'दर् 'च 'बैगा दर दें व 'धेव 'श्रू अ 'व।

Should you wonder, "What sort [of scripture] is of definitive meaning and what sort requires interpretation?"

### दर्ने ने नाई र नुते क्षें न अन्न निष्

20

25

This is posited by way of the subjects discussed.

# 15 र्देश्वर्यायः क्रेंश्वर्याः वै देश्वर्यते देश्वर्यते देश्वर्याः केंश्वर्याः वै द्वर्यते देश्वर्याः केंश्वर्याः केंश्वर्याः

Those teaching the ultimate are held to be scriptures of definitive meaning and those teaching conventionalities are held to be scriptures whose meaning requires interpretation. In that vein, the *Teachings of Akshayamati Sūtra* says:

### देश'यदे'र्देव'ग्री'अर्दे'श्रे'वे'ग्राद्यायदे'र्देव'ग्री'अर्दे'श्रे'वे'ग्रादेवा

What are sutras of definitive meaning? What are sutras whose meaning requires interpretation?

### अर्दे श्रेग्नरप्रातुर हें य श्रुयाया यश्रुवाया देवा वे दराय दे देवा वे शावित ।

Those which teach [within] establishing conventionalities are called sutras of interpretable meaning.

### अर्दे श्रेष्मर्प्त्यार्द्द्वर्त्वर्यायाञ्चयायायश्चवर्याने द्वार्वि देश्वर्यते देवरविश्वर्ये।

Those which teach [within] establishing the ultimate are called sutras of definitive meaning.

### सर्दि:[569]क्ट्रेंग्नर:द्माक्रिंग:दर:धी:मो:क्ट्राक्टिंग्का:चक्रुव:य:दे:द्माक्टे:द्वर:विका:वुर्दे। ।

Those teachings [about various objects by way of] various words and letters are called sutras of interpretable meaning.

### अर्दे श्रेष्ट्र प्राप्त विश्व प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्राप्त प्राप्त प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्राप्त प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्राप्त प्राप्त प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्र प्र प्राप्त प्र प्र प्राप्त प्र प्र प्र प्र प्त

#### 5 वेशक्षा

10

15

20

25

Those teaching that which is profound, difficult to view, and difficult to realize are called sutras of definitive meaning.

# र्देन्त्रगुतः हें यायश्रुत्यस्य प्रदर्भेत् पुरायश्रितः यात्रितः स्वितः स्वतः स्वितः स्वतः स्वतः स्वतः स्वितः स्वितः स्वतः स्वतः

Question: What is the mode of teaching a conventionality, through the reaching of which [a sutra] comes to be of interpretable meaning, and what is the mode of teaching the ultimate, through the teaching of which a [a sutra] comes to be of definitive meaning?

### वर्नः षदः अर्दे देः वर्षः विवः तृः ग्राह्मवः वर्षः वर्षः

This is also indicated very clearly in that sutra. It says:

अर्दे श्चे ग्वर्त्त्वा न्यात्र विश्व क्षेत्र क्षेत

Those which teach things that must be expressed by way of various words [such as] self, sentient being, living being, the nourishes, creature, person, born from Manu, child of Manu, agent feeler, in the manner of [there being and inherently existent] controller, for instance, when there is no [inherently existent] controller are called sutras of interpretable meaning.

याद्री त्याद्री त्

Those which teach the doors of liberation—emptiness, signlessness, wishlessness, no [ultimate] composition, no [ultimate] production, not being [ultimately] produced, no [ultimate] existence of sentient beings, no [ultimate] existence of living beings, no [ultimate] existence of persons and no [ultimate] existence of controllers—are called sutras of definitive meaning.

बेशयन्त्राक्षेत्यान्त्रःश्चेत्याक्षेत्याक्षेत्रायाक्षेत्रायाक्ष्यायाक्ष्यायाक्षेत्रायाक्षेत्रायाक्षेत्रः याक्षेत्रायाक्षेत्रः याक्षेत्रः याक्षेत्

Since it is said thus that those which teach selflessness, no [ultimate] production, and so forth in the manner of eliminating elaborations are of definitive meaning and those which teach self and so forth are of interpretable meaning, you should know that selflessness, no [ultimate] production, and so forth are the ultimate, and production and so forth are conventional.

### **नेट**'दे'वहेंब'ग्री'ग्रुय'र्घे'यशग्रदा

5

10

15

20

25

The King of Meditative Stabilizations Sutra also says:

क्रॅंट्यायदे यम्यानेश्वयाय्यायन्य या द्वा । देश दें देश से देश देश प्राप्त विश्वया से स्वा । स्वा देश से स्व स्व स्व स्व स्व स्व स्व । । क्रिंश दे स्व स्व स्व स्व स्व स्व स्व । ।

### वेशमञ्जूदशः श्री

One knows as instances of sutras of definitive meaning [those which teach] In accordance with the emptiness explained by the Sugata.

One knows as of interpretable meaning all those [verbal] doctrines [i.e., sutras] In which "sentient being", person" and "creature" are taught.

#### <u> বর্'ঝ'শ্বুহ'ব'ঝঝ'শ্রুহ'।</u>

दे भ्रायमान देव द्याया यहें दाया वित्व देशाय दे देव भीवा या वर्जे वाया वर्जे वाया वर्जे विश्व विश्व विश्व वाया वर्जे वर्

Kamalashila's *Illumination of the Middle Way* says:

Therefore it should be understood that, "Only those which discuss the ultimate are of definitive meaning and the opposite are of interpretable meaning."

तसम्बाद्यास्त्रम् स्वात्त्रस्य स्वर्धाः स्वर्धाः स्वर्धाः स्वर्धः स्वर्धः स्वर्धः स्वर्धः स्वर्धः स्वर्धः स्वर देश्वर्धः देवे स्वर्धः स्वर्धः स्वर्धः स्वर्धः स्वर्धः स्वर्धः ।

#### ন্বৈশস্কুদ্রান্য

Also, the Ornament Illuminating the Exalted Wisdom Operating in the Sphere of All Buddhas says,

That which is a definite object is the ultimate,"

# श्चे प्रायोद्यायाः स्वावायायाः प्रायायाः स्वावायाः स्वायायः स्वावायाः स्वायायः स्वावायाः स्वावायाः स्वावायाः स्वावायाः स्वावायाः स्वावायायः स्वावायाः स्वावायाः स्वावायाः स्वावायाः स्वावायाः स्वावायाः स्वायायः स्वावायायः स्वावायः स्वावायः स्वावायः स्वावायः स्वावायः स्वायः स्वायायः स्वायायः स्वायायः स्वायायः स्वायायः स्वायायः स्वायः स्वायः स्वायायः स्वायायः स्वायायः स्वायः स्वयः स्वायः स्वायः स

#### ন্বিষাশাস্ক্রমার্ম্য

5

10

15

20

...and also the *Teachings of Akshyamati Sūtra* teaches with respect to no [ultimate] production, and so forth, "[they] are definitive objects." Therefore, it is definite that only no [ultimate] production and so forth are called "ultimates".

# देवि-धु-र-त्तुःअ-रेग् श्रायवि-र्क्षेग् श्रान्व्यावि-र्वेत्श्वावि-र्वेत्श्वावि-र्वेत्श्वावि-र्वेत्श्वावि-र्वेत्श्वावि-र्वेत्श्वावि-र्वेत्श्वावि-र्वेत्श्वावि-र्वेत्र्यावि-र्वेत्र्यावि-र्वेत्श्वावि-र्वेत्र्यावि-र्वेत्य्यावि-र्वेत्र्यावि-र्वेत्र्यावि-र्वेत्र्यावि-र्वेत्र्यावि-र्वेत्र्यावि-र्वेत्र्यावि-र्वेत्र्यावि-र्वेत्र्यावि-र्वेत्र्यावि-र्वेत्र्यावि-र्वेत्र्यावि-र्वेत्य्यावि-र्वेत्र्यावि-र्वेत्र्यावि-र्वे

Therefore, [Nāgārjuna's] Mādhyamika "Collections of Reasonings" as well as the commentaries on their thought are to be held as teaching the definitive meaning just as it is because they extensively settle the ultimate which is free from all the collections of elaborations such as [inherently existent] production, cessation, and so forth.

### 

Why are those two that teach such called "[sutras] of interpretable meaning " and "[sutras] of definitive meaning"?

# 

Since [a sutra's] meaning cannot be interpreted otherwise, it is called that of which the meaning is definite or of definitive meaning, for since that meaning is the meaning of suchness, it is the finality of that which is to be settled.

It cannot be interpreted beyond that and cannot be interpreted as something other than that by some other person because it possesses valid proofs.

### ने सूर यद द्वा अ क्रूट च यक्ष

देश्वायते र्देश्वायत् वित्वा स्वायत् वित्वा स्वायत् वित्वायत् वित्वयत् वित्वायत् वित्वयत् वित्वयत् वित्वयत्वयत् वित्वयत् वित्

#### ন্বৰাৰ্জ্য ।

20

5 Thus Kamalashila's *Illumination of the Middle Way* says:

What is [a sutra] of definitive meaning? That of which there is valid cognition and which makes an explanation in terms of the ultimate, for it cannot be interpreted **by** another person **as** something aside from that.

### <u> ने स्थर माश्चरका यदिः शुमाका ग्रीका ने 'द्रर यदिः ने बाध र सुका हो।</u>

10 Through this statement one can implicitly understand [scriptures] of interpretable meaning.

### वर्देवै दें बादी स्वाप्त स्वापत स्वाप्त स्वापत स

Those of which the meaning is to be interpreted, or which require interpretation, are just those which, their meaning being unsuitable to hold just as it is, must be interpreted as some other meaning though explaining [their] thought.

# 15 श्रुम्दि प्रतिवाद्य प्रत्य श्रुम्प्य श्रुम्य श्रुम्प्य श्रुम्य श्रुम्प्य श्रुम्य श्रुम्प्य श्रुम्य श्रुम्प्य श्रुम्य श्रुम्प्य श्रुम्प्य श्रुम्प्य श्रुम्प्य श्रुम्प्य श्रुम्प्य श्रुम्य श्रूम्य श्रुम्य श्रुम्य श्रुम्य श्रुम्य श्रूम्य श्र

Or, they are those of which the meaning, although all right to hold as literal, is not the final suchness, and one must still seek that suchness as something other than that [mere appearance].

Qualm: Since sutras of definitive meaning are literal, then if, "production does not exist," "persons do not exist", and so forth appear in those sutras, one **must** hold that production and persons **utterly** do not exist; otherwise it would absurdly follow that since those [sutras] would not be literal, they would require interpretation.

# 25 तबर्'यर से श्रूर है। रे 'क्षेर म्झुर या वेंदि हें व'या बा हो या वेंदि हैं व'या बा हो वा वा वेंदि हैं व या बा हो या विकास के वितास के विकास के विकास के विकास के विकास के विकास के विकास के विका

[Answer:] This does not appear to be correct, for when the teacher [Buddha] who is the speaker refutes production and so forth in that way, there are seen to be many sutras of definitive meaning in which the qualification "ultimately "is affixed; and,

### खुन्यमञ्जूम्याम्बेर्गासून्य। असुन्यते न्नयमञ्जूष्यमञ्जूष्यमञ्जूरामी केंश्राप्येत स्थापन स्थापन स्थापन स्थापन स

if there occurs one affixing of the qualification, then since it is a common attribute it must be affixed even at points where is does not occur.

### ৾৾<del>ঀ</del>৾৽ড়ৼ৾৾ঌয়ৼ৾৾ঀ৽ৼ৾ঀ৾য়ড়ঢ়ড়য়ড়য়ড়৽য়য়৽ৼ৾৽ড়ৼ৽য়ৢ৾য়৽য়ৼ৾ঀ৽য়য়য়৽য়ৼয়৽য়৽য়৽য়ড়য়ড়

15

20

Further, since [no production ultimately] is the suchness of those phenomena, how could that which teaches such not be of definitive meaning?

Otherwise, through refuting the generality "production", instances [of production such as] words would also have to be refuted whereby there could also be no presentation of sutras of definitive meaning which teach such.

Therefore, you should know that the fact that it is not suitable to hold as literal what is taught in a few isolated words, out of context, not connecting it with what is said before or after in the general run of a sutra or treatise, does not destroy [that text's] being a scripture of definitive meaning.

You should also know that even though what is taught on the level of the words is suitable to be held as literal, it is not that it [necessarily] is not of interpretable meaning [that is, literal texts can still require interpretation].

### [Chapter 2. Reliable Sources]

[571.12] गर्नेश्वराम् अवार्त्वी प्रसाय विशेषाय विश्वराम् विश्वराष्ट्र विश्वराष्ट्र

[2/3] Second: The History of Commentary of Nāgārjuna's Thought

What is the chronology of the stages of commenting on the thought of Nāgārjuna, who commented non-erroneously on the scriptures—The Perfection of Wisdom Sutras and so forth—which teach in this way that all phenomena are without any inherent existent production, cessation, and so forth?

Even the great Mādhyamikas such as the master Buddhapalita, Bhāvaviveka, Chandrakīrti, and Shantarakshita took Āryadeva to be valid like the master [Nāgārjuna].

याव्यः अश्वात्ये व्यात्रः याव्यः याव्यः व्यात्यः विश्वः याः याः विश्वः य

Therefore since both the father [Nāgārjuna] and his [spiritual] son [Āryadeva] are sources for other Mādhyamikas, earlier [Tibetan Scholars] used the verbal convention "Madhyamikas of the model texts" for those two and used the verbal convention "partisan Mādhyamikas" for the others.

20 বনু'ম'মর্বি

5

10

Certain earlier spiritual guides said that when the names are designated by way of how they posit conventionalities, Mādhyamikas are of two types: Sautrantika-Mādhyamikas who assert that external objects exist conventionally and Yogachara-Mādhyamikas who assert that external object do not exist conventionally.

# र्देव न्यायर्दे न्रह्त्या ची क्चें वया ये दायन ग्रायय दा ग्रिया है। स्वर क्षें दा ग्रीक सर्वे व न्याय देव प्य प्य देव प्याय स्वर्ण स्वर्य स्वर्ण स्वर्ण स्वर्ण स्व

They are also of two types when names are designated by way of how they assert the ultimate: Reason-Established Illusionists, who assert that a composite of the two, appearance and emptiness, is an ultimate truth and Proponents of Thorough-Non Abiding who assert that the mere elimination of elaborations with respect to appearances is an ultimate truth.

### दे<sup>ॱ</sup>मानेश्वाचीॱश्रृःसादीॱश्चेंचाद्वेंदादेव त्वे चादर्केंद्दः मुग्सात्यः वेृष्यात्यः श्चेंम्श्वाचाया सेदायमः तदेंद्दः त्या

They assert that the former of these two are the masters Shantarakshita, Kamalashila, and so forth.

### ्चुं अप्राप्तान्दरम्य कृते अपने कायते चाक्षुत्र के कुष्म मान्यते क्ष्येय द्वीत । विकास के वा स्थान के विकास के

The verbal conventions "illusion-like" and "thoroughly non-abiding" are asserted also by some Indian masters.

# $\frac{1}{2}$ ત્રાપ્ત ત્રાપ્ત ત્રાપ્ત ત્રુપ્ત ત્ર ત્રુપ્ત ત્રુપત્ર ત્ય ત્રુપ્ત ત્ર ત્ય ત્ર ત્ય ત્ર ત્ય ત્ર ત્ય ત્ર ત્ય ત્ર ત્ય ત

Indeed, in general, some Indian and Tibetan masters who claimed to be Mādhyamikans did make such assertions, but what is to be settled here are just the systems of the great Mādhyamikans who are followers of the master Nāgārjuna.

### सःश्रांस्यश्रां विषाः गीश्रायन्दायमः वृश्

5

15

20

Who could explain [all] the subtle [distinctions]?

# म्बन्ध्याम्बन्ध्याम्बन्ध्याम्बन्ध्याम्बन्धामिन्दन्यम्बन्धामिन्दन्यम्बन्धामिनद्वम्बन्धामिनद्वम्बन्धामिनद्वम्बन्धामिनद्वम्बन्धामिनद्वम्बन्धामिनद्वम्बन्धामिनद्वम्बन्धामिनद्वम्बन्धामिनद्वम्बन्दन्यम्बन्धामिनद्वम्बन्दन्यम्बन्दन्यम्बन्दन्यम्बन्धमिनद्वम्बन्दन्यम्बन्दनम्बन्दन्यम्बन्दन्यम्बन्यम्बन्दनम्बन्यनम्बन्दनम्यनम्बन्दनम्यनम्बन्दनम्बन्दनम्बन्दनम्बन्दनम्यनम्बन्दनम्यनम्बन्दनम्बन्

Moreover, the statement by the great translator Lo-den-shay-rap that positing Mādhyamikas as twofold by way of their mode of asserting the ultimate is a presentation generating delight in the obscured is very good.

10

15

दे'द्रम्'मी'त्र्देंद्र'य'दी'देम्बान्नेबाह्रेबाद्यमामीबाम्बाक्यायते देंद्र' इंशार्देद्र' द्रशायदेद्र'यर ख्रूद्र' या देम्बानेबामी माब्द्रय'दी'देद्र' द्रशायदेद्र'य'द्रद्रश्चर्यमामीबाम्बाक्यायते देव्द्रशायदेद्र' द्रशासीव्यायते द्रिया माब्द्रशायदे द्रिया माब्द्रशायदे द्रिया माब्द्र्यमा देव्यायदे द्रिया माब्द्र्यमा द्रिया माब्द्र्यमा देव्यायदे द्रिया माब्द्र्यमा माब्द्र्यमा माब्द्र्यमा माबद्र्यमा माबद्र्यमा माबद्र्यमा माबद्र्यमा माबद्र्यमा माबद्र्यमा माबद्र्यमा माबद्रमा माबद्र्यमा माबद्र्यमा मावद्र्यमा मावद्र्यमा माबद्र्यमा माबद्रमा माबद्र्यमा मावद्र्यमा मावद्र्यमा मावद्र्यमा मावद्र्यमा मावद्रमा मावद्र्यमा मावद्र्यमा मावद्र्यमा मावद्र्यमा मावद्र्यमा मावद्र

For, their assertion appears to be an assertion that [for the Reason-Established Illusionists] the mere object that is comprehended by an inferential reasoning consciousness is an ultimate truth whereas it is said in both Shantarakshita's *Ornament for the Middle Way* and Kamalashila's *Illumination of the Middle Way* that the object comprehended by a reasoning consciousness is designated "ultimate" due to being concordant with an ultimate truth.

८्ट्यः या क्रेन्यं मान्न्यः स्थान्यः स्थान्यः स्थ्रीं सायायस्य प्रत्यः प्रत्यः प्रत्यः स्थान्ते । प्रत्यः स्थान्यः स्थान्यः स्थान्यः स्थान्यः साधिनः साधिन

Also, since the other great Mādhyamikas do not assert **that** the mere object which is an elimination through reasoning of elaborations **is** an ultimate truth [these earlier scholars' explanation of Thoroughly Non-Abiding Mādhyamikas] is not good.

With respect to this [chronology of the commentaries on Nāgārjunas thought] the master Ye-shay-day explains that the masters, the Superior [Nāgārjuna] and his [spiritual] son [Arayadeva] did not make clear in their Mādhyamika treatises whether external objects do or do not exist and...

...after them the master Bhāvaviveka, refuting the system of Consciousness-only, presented a system in which external objects exist conventionally.

नेविश्रक्षेत्रान्यंविष्वेत्राविष्ठ्याक्षेत्राक्ष्याक्षेत्राक्षेत्राक्षेत्राचिष्ठात्त्राविष्ठात्त्राच्यात्राच्यात्त्राच्यात्त्राच्यात्त्राच्यात्त्राच्यात्त्राच्यात्त्राच्यात्राच्यात्त्राच्यात्रच्यात्राच्यात्राच्यात्रच्यात

Then the master Shatarakshita set forth a different Mādhyamika system which teaches, in dependence on Yogachara texts, that external objects do not exist conventionally and also teaches that the mind is without inherent existence ultimately.

# नम्बाद्यास्य स्वाद्यास्य स्वाद्यास्य स्वाद्यास्य स्वाद्य स्वाद्यास्य स्वाद्य स्वाद्य

Thereby, two forms of Mādhyamika arose, and the former is designated Sautrantika-Mādhyamika and the later Yogachara-Mādhyamika. The chronology is evident as [Ye-shay-day says].

# ऽ देव'गुर'र्स्सेव'न्देव'त्रु'व'ग्वामाश्राय'वे'शक्ष्र्न'र्'सुंभें देव'र्खे'र्स्य'र्खेन्'यर'यवेन्'गुर'शुव'यश्रवत'र्स्से'से'यक्ष्य्य'यक्ष्य'स्थे र्सेन्य'वेष'गुर'र्स्सेव'न्सेव'त्रु'य'वेष'गुर'से

However although the master Chandrakīrti asserts that external objects exist conventionally, he does not do so in accordance with other proponents of tenets and thus it is unsuitable to call him a "Sautrantika [Mādhyamika]".

### 10 दे'चबैद'र्'दे' चवार्' श्रुपंच'र्ट्स अध्यापर पर्देर्' पदर विद'र्' श्रे रेग्स स्था

20

Similarly, the assertion that he accords with the Vaibashikas is also very unreasonable.

# यद्भः देते विंद् ग्री खे द्रः श्री यद्भः यद्भः

The usage by scholars of the later dissemination [of the Buddhist doctrine] to the land of snowy mountains [Tibet] of the two verbal conventions, Prasangika and Svatantrika, for Mādhyamikas accords with Chandrakīrti's *Clear Words*. Hence, you should not think that it is their own fabrication.

# देश्वान्तः श्रम् प्रति देश्वान्तः स्वान्तः स्वान्त

Therefore, [Mādhyamikas] are limited to the two, those who do and do not assert external objects conventionally, and also, if names are designated by way of how the view ascertaining emptiness, the ultimate, is generated in the continuum, they are limited the two Prasangika and Svatantrikas.

### 

Following which of those masters should one seek the thought of the Superior [Nāgārjuna] and his [spiritual] son [Āradeva]?

#### 

The great elder [Atisha] took the master Chandrakīrti's system as chief, and seeing this, the great earlier lamas of these precepts [of the stages of the path to enlightenment] who followed him also held that system to be chief.

The master Chandrakīrti [himself] saw the master Buddhapalita from among the commentators on Nāgārjuna's *Treatise on the Middle Way* as elucidating completely the thought of the Superior [Nāgārjuna].

5 स्वाक्षाने मिलिन स्वेत्र स्वाक्षान्य स्वाकष्ठ स्वावकष्ठ स्वाकष्ठ स्वाकष्ठ स्वाकष्ठ स्वाकष्ठ स्वावकष्ठ स्वावकष्ठ स्वाकष्ठ स्वाकष्ठ स्वाकष्ठ स्वाकष्ठ स्वाकष्ठ स्वाकष्ठ स्वावकष्ठ स्वावकष्ठ स्वावकष्ठ स्वाकष्ठ स्वाकष्ठ स्वावकष्ठ स्वावकष्य स्वावकष्ठ स्वावकष्ठ स्वावकष्ठ स्वावकष्ठ स्वावकष्ठ स्वावकष्य स्व

Thereupon, he took that system as his basis, and also taking many good explanations from the master Bhāvaviveka and refuting those that appeared to be a little incorrect, he commented on the thought of the Superior [Nāgārjuna].

10 र्ब्र्स्य प्रति पार्च अर्थ के प्रत्ये प्रत

15 ...here the thought of the Superior [Nāgārjuna] will be settled following the master Buddhapalita and the glorious Chandrakīrti.

### [Chapter 3. The Stages of Entry Into Suchness]

[574.4] म्राह्मायाक्ष्रीं प्राप्त वित्र मित्र मित्र वित्र मित्र म

[3/3] Third: How To Settle The View Of Emptiness

This has two parts: the stages of entry into suchness and the actual settling of suchness.

### 

20

[1/2] One: [The Stages of Entry Into Suchness]

यद्र-विम्मानीः क्षें-व्याप्त्र-विद्यान्त्य-विद्यान्य-विद्यान्य-विद्यान्त्य-विद्यान्त्य-विद्यान्त्य-विद्यान्त्य-वि

With respect to the first, what is the nirvāṇa [i.e., the passing from sorrow], the suchness that is here the object of attainment, and by way of what sort of entry into suchness, that is, methods for attaining it, does one enter?

ष्ठुै। प्रत्यत्मी र्क्षेश्व भ्राक्षीं मुश्राया दे। मिं वाश्राधीवाय विवाद दे। मिं कि प्रत्याय दे। मिं वाश्राधीवाय विवाद प्रत्या के प्रत्या विवाद विवाद प्रत्या विवाद व

The extinguishment in all forms of the conceptions of [inherently existent] I and mine, by means of pacifying all appearance of the varieties of internal and external phenomena as [their own] suchness whereas they are not [their own] suchness, along with their predispositions, is the suchness that is here the object of attainment, the Truth Body.

दे!व्यात्रात्तेत्रात्त्रात्त्र्यात्त्रात्त्र्यात्त्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्तेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्तेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्तेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रेत्रेत्रात्त्रेत्रेत्रेत्रत्तेत्रेत्रत्त्तेत्रत्तेत्रत्तेत्र

The stages of how you enter into that suchness are as follows: First, having contemplated the faults and disadvantages of cyclic existence and turned the mind [from it], you should generate a wish to cast that [cyclic existence] aside.

देव्यादे क्षित्राच्या विश्वादित्र क्षात्र क्षेत्र क

Then, seeing that it will not be overcome if its cause is not overcome, you research its root, thinking about what the root of cyclic existence is.

15

20

25

यहेगाः स्वत्याः अत्याः सेषाः प्रतिविद्याः प्रतिविद्याः प्रति । स्वत्याः स्वत्याः स्वत्याः स्वत्याः स्वत्याः स्व स्वत्यः स्वत्यः स्वत्याः स्वत्याः स्वत्याः स्वत्याः स्वत्याः स्वत्याः स्वत्याः स्वत्यः स्व

Thereby, upon inducing ascertainment from the depths with respect to the way in which the view of the transitory, or ignorance serves as the root of cyclic existence, you need to generate a non-artificial wish to abandon it.

देवश्वरहेगःकुःर्वेगःयदेनेत्रायम् देवत्याये प्रत्याम् विष्याये विष्याययः स्त्रीत्यायम् विष्यायम् विषयायम् विषयम् विषयायम् विषयायम् विषयायम् विषयायम् विषयम् विषयायम् विषयायम् विषयायम् विषयायम् विषयम् विषयायम् विषयम् विषयम्य

Next, seeing that overcoming the view of the transitory depends upon generating the wisdom realizing the non-existence of the self conceived by that [view], you see that it is necessary to refute that self.

Gaining ascertainment in dependence on scriptures and reasonings which damage the existence and prove the non-existence of that self is the indispensable method for one who is intent upon liberation.

दे'स्रम्यद्वाप्त्राच्च्याची'य'यम्प्याप्त्राच्च्याची'स्राप्त्राच्याची'स्राप्त्राच्च्याची'स्राप्त्राच्च्याची'स्राप्त्राच्च्याची'स्राप्त्रम् स्राप्त्रम् स्राप्ति

Having gained the view ascertaining in this way that the self and mine do not in the least have inherent existence, through familiarizing with that meaning the Truth Body will be attained. Chandrakīrti's *Clear Words* says:

म्यापित्रं क्षेत्र क्षेत्र स्थापित्र स्थापित्

If all these afflictions, actions, bodies, agents, and effects are not [their own] suchness, but nonetheless—like a city of scent eaters and so forth—while not being [their own] suchness appear to childish [common persons] in the aspect of [being their own] suchness, ...

षदः दर्ने र दे विं त के द ते वाद लिया धीत त्या दे विं त के द त्या द ह्या यद र है त्यू र धीत ले ता

...then what is here suchness and how does one enter to that suchness?

# यर्हेन्यमः वुःश्रे। वदः नदः ब्रेके नर्देश्वार्यः अन्यश्वार्याश्वार्यम् वदः नदः ब्रेज्यायन् वात्तुः वर्षेत्रः यान्यायन् व्याप्तायन् व्यापत्त्रः व्यापत्त्यः व्यापत्त्रः व्यापत्त्यः व्यापत्त्रः व्यापत्त्रः व्यापत्त्रः व्यापत्त्रः व्यापत्त्रः वयापत्त्रः वयापत्त्यः वयापत्त्रः वयापत्त्रः वयापत्तः वय

Answer: Here suchness is the extinguishment in all forms of the apprehension of [inherently existent] I and the apprehension of the [inherently existent] mine with respect to the internal and external on account of the non-apprehension of internal and external things.

### दे विंत्र केद त्या दह्या यात्री

With respect to entry into suchness [my own] Supplement to Nāgārjuna's "Treatise on the Middle Way" says (VI 120):

र्वेत् : ब्रॅन्स क्रुंत : द्व्यस : अः त्युक्ष : त्र त्या : व्युक्त : व्युक्

Yogis see with their minds that all afflictions And faults arise from the view of the transitory And having realized that the self is the object of That [view] refute self.

#### ৾ঽঌ৽ঢ়ৢ৽য়৽৻৸য়৾৽ঀঌ৽য়ঌ৽ৼঢ়ৢ৻য়৽৻৸৻৻ৼৢয়৽য়৽৻৸য়য়ঢ়ঽ৻৸য়য়৽ঢ়ৢ৻৾৻ ৽

Thus, [a description of how to enter suchness] should be sought from such statements there.

#### वेशयाद्या

5

10

15

20 [Chandrakīrti's *Clear Words*] also says:

Yogis who wish to enter into suchness and wish thoroughly to abandon all afflictions and faults investigate, "What does this cyclic existence have as its root?"

10

15

20

25

# ने ने भूभ के नियम के

When they thoroughly investigate in this manner, they see that cyclic existence has as its root the view of the transitory collection, and they see that the self is the object of observation of that view of the transitory collection.

They see that the view of the transitory collection is abandoned through non-observation of self and that through abandoning that [view], all afflictions and faults are overcome.

म्परंतिमायनमारुः यहेत्रायदे खुव्यायनमारुक्षायुः यायन् विकासक्षेत्राय्यक्षेत्रायम् विकासक्षेत्रायम् विकासक्षेत्र

Hence, at the very beginning they investigate with respect to just the self—"What is the self, the object of the conception of self?"

Although many reasonings refuting inherent existence were set forth with respect to immeasurable individual subjects, when yogis [initially] engage [in practice], they meditate in an abridged way within settling the lack of inherent existence in terms of I and mine.

इःवेदेः रवः वेदः वक्कित् वर्षः देवः [576] धिवः यरः क्षेत्रः द्विवः अदशक्किशः वश्चितः वश्चितः वश्चितः वश्चितः व वः व्यवस्थान्य वश्चितः वर्षः वश्चितः वर्षः वश्चितः वर्षः वश्चितः वर्षः वश्चितः वश्चितः वश्चितः वश्चितः वश्चितः

The master Buddhapalita says that this is the meaning of the eighteenth chapter of Nāgārjuna's *Treatise on the Middle Way*, and in dependence on his statement, the master Chandrakīrti presents [the stages of entry into suchness thus in his *Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way"*]; ...

<u>५तुःसात्मात्महुमायतेःमदःचमामीःयद्मासेदःश्र्र्वःयः इससाग्रदः स्यान्तेदः यक्तुदःयः केदः क्तुस्यसः तकदःयः धेवः व्</u>

...the teachings on the selflessness of the person in Chandrakīrti's *Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) 'Treatise on the Middle Way"* also are extensive explanations of just the eighteenth chapter of [Nāgārjuna's *Treatise*].

### ग्याफेरदिरावे चेत्राकेवायदे देश्वेत्राव केत्रायदे देश्वेत्राय स्वाप्य केत्राय स्वाप्य स्वाप्य

5

10

15

Qualm: Is this not [an occasion of] teaching the mode of entry into suchness of the Mahayana?

### देशक्षावन्यान्दरावन्यायीरावहेंक्षायावन्यास्त्राविष्टेवाचुविन्देश्विन्द्र्वीत्रियाच्या

In that case, the mere extinguishment of the conception of [inherently existent] I and mine is unsuitable to be the suchness that is to be attained.

## यन्षान्दरयन्षाक्षेत्रायाः स्वाद्याक्षेत्राक्षेत्राक्षः व्याद्याक्षेत्रायाः स्वाद्याक्षेत्रायाः स्वाद्याक्षेत्र यात्रह्षायते त्यस्त्रात्त्रोत्ते स्वाद्याक्षेत्रस्य स्वाद्याक्षेत्रस्य स्वाद्याक्षेत्रस्य स्वाद्याक्षेत्रस्य स

Also, since within the mere settling of the absence of inherent existence of I and mine, there is no settling of the selflessness of phenomena, it is not suitable to posit [just the former] as the path for entering in to suchness.

## 

*Response:* There is no fault. For, with respect to the extinguishment, in all ways, of the conception of I and mine, there are two types of which [the first], the utter abandonment of the afflictions in the manner of their not being posited again, does indeed exist among Hinayanaists; ...

### **ख़ॖऀॱॸॣॸॱॺॸॱॺऀॱक़ॕॺॱॻॖऀॱॺॗॣॕॺॱ**य़ढ़ऀॱॶढ़॔ढ़ॱय़ॱॿय़ॺॱॶॸॣॱॺऻॸॖढ़ॱय़ॱॸॣऄॺऻॺॱय़ॺॱॺॖॖॣॸॺॱय़ॱढ़ऀॱक़ॕॿॱॻॖऀॱॿॣॗॱॺऀढ़ॱय़ढ़ऀॱख़ॗऀॸॱॸॣॸॱऻ

...however [the second,] the abandonment by way of utter non-apprehension of all signs which are elaborations [even of the appearance of inherent existence] with respect to external and internal phenomena, is the Truth Body.

#### 

Furthermore, when you realize that the self does not exist inherently, the conception also that the aggregates which are branches of that [self] exist inherently is overcome.

It is like the way in which when a chariot is burned, the wheels and so forth which are its parts are also burned.

#### दे.लट.क्र्या.चाश्चरात्त्रशा

5

10

15

20

Chandrakīrti's Clear Words says:

यहेब ब्रश्यहम्मश्रायायाये क्षेत्र के विषय प्रत्ये क्षेत्र के विषय प्रत्ये के विषय प्रत्ये के विषय प्रत्ये के व यहे विषय प्रत्य के विषय प्रत्ये के विषय प्रत्य के विषय प्रत्ये के विषय प्रत्ये

Those wishing liberation analyze whether [the self] which is imputed dependently, which serves as a basis for the strong adherence to self by those possessing the error of ignorance, and of which the five aggregates are seen to be appropriated, has the character of the aggregates or does not have the character of the aggregates.

द्यायाश्चर्यश्चर्त्रात्र्व्वित्त्याद्यश्चर्यायर्देत्याद्यस्यश्चात्र्वेश्चर्यात्रेत्वेश्चर्यात्रेत्वेश्चर्यात्र यत्याक्षेत्रव्येत्त्यायाय्येदाद्या । यत्याक्षेत्रव्यरायाय्यव्यक्षुत्रा ।

चन्याःसान्स्रीयान्याःस्त्रेःस्त्रीत्रःचन्याःस्तृःयान्यान्याःस्त्रेःयान्याःयाःस्त्रीतःस्त्रेयान्यःस्त्रीतःस्त्रीयान्यःस्त्रीयःस्त्रीयान्यःस्त्रीयान्यःस्त्रीयःस्त्रीयान्यःस्त्रीयःस्त्र

When it is analyzed in all ways, those wishing liberation do not observe [a self having the character of the aggregates] and therefore, in those [aggregates, as Nāgārjuna's *Treatise* (XVIII.2ab) says:]

If the self itself does not exist How could the mine exist?

Because the self is not observed, also the mine, the basis of designation as the self, will very much not be observed.

When a chariot is burned, its parts also are burned and thus are not observed; similarly, when yogis realize the self is not [inherently] existent, they will realize the selflessness also of the mine, the things that are the aggregates.

25 विद्यायन्यात्यात्रमः प्रतिवासिन्यात्रम् विद्यायात्रम् व

Thus [Chandrakīrti] says that when you realize the lack of inherent existence with respect to the self, you realize the lack of self, that is, inherent existence, also with respect to the mine, the aggregates.

### तह्यात्रम्थात्यश्रामुद्रा

5

10

20

25

Chandrakīrti's [Auto]commentary on the Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way" says:

Because of error due to apprehending an intrinsic entity in forms and so forth, [Hearers and Solitary Realizers following Hinayana tenets] do not realize even the selflessness of persons.

### यन्याः तृःयान्याकायादेः याद्येः याद्ये याद्य

This is because they are apprehending [as inherently existent] the aggregates which are the basis of designation as self. [Nāgārjuna's *Precious Garland* 35ab] says:

देश्चेत्रस्तर्येमः यहेत्वर्षेत्रः य। । देश्चेत्रप्तेश्यादमः यहेत्वर्षेत्। ।

As long as one conceives the aggregates [to be inherently existent] So long does one conceive an [inherently existent] I with respect to them

### डेबासुर पॅं स्टायबेत्र सेर प्रस्था हॅग्बादाना नाया नी प्रत्या सेर् से हॅग्बाय स्यासुर वायरे ही स्रो।

Thus it is said that if you do not realize the aggregates to be without inherent existence, you do not realize the selflessness of the person.

Qualm: If just that awareness realizing the absence of inherent existence with respect to the person realizes that the aggregates are without inherent existence, there would be the fault that the two awarenesses realizing the two selflessnesses would be one.

र्केश्वाद्याप्तात्र विश्वार्थे श्रेष्ट्र विश्वार्थे विश्वार प्रति । विश्वार व

[However] since the two, phenomena and persons, are separate, the two awarenesses realizing the lack of inherent existence of those two are also separate, like, for example, the awareness realizing the impermanence of a pot and of a pillar.

म्यात्रम्य स्थात्र स्थात्य स्थात्य स्थात्य स्थात्र स्थात्र स्थात्र स्थात्र स्थात्य स्

[On the other hand] if just that awareness realizing the person to be without inherent existence does not realize the aggregates to be without inherent existence, then how can you posit [the meaning of Chandrakīrti's statement] that when one realizes the selflessness of the person, one realizes the lack of inherent existence of the aggregates?

### द्वैत्वःद्वरः विश्वासी खेत्रः यश्चर्द्वः वार्वेषाः सावन् द्वरः वार्वेषाः

5

10

15

20

30

[Answer:] Since we do not assert the first of these questions [that just that awareness realizing the lack of inherent existence with respect to the person realizes the aggregates as without inherent existence], I will explain the later question.

यार अया प्रदाय विदाय में विश्वाय देश हैं कि प्रीश्वाय के स्वर्ष के प्रत्ये के स्वर्ष के स्वर्ण के स्वर्ष के स्वर्ण के स्वर्ण

Although just that awareness realizing the person as without inherent existence does not engage in the thought, "the aggregates do not inherently exist," that awareness is able, **without relying on another** [reasoning or consciousness], to induce an ascertaining consciousness which ascertains that the aggregates lack inherent existence, whereby it is able to eliminate the superimpositions that superimpose inherent existence on the aggregates.

Therefore, [Chandrakīrti] says that when the person is realized to lack inherent existence, the aggregates also are realized to lack inherent existence.

### दर्भ व्यद्यसुङ्का स्वापिक स्वा

यदी स्वरायद्या देश वार्या वारा भी तेश वार्या वार्या वार्या वेश वार्या वार्य

### 25 वेशम्बुदश्ययः सूर्रे श्रियर पुरुष्ट्री

This should be known in accordance with the statement in the *Buddhapālita Commentary on (Nāgārjuna's) Treatise on the Middle Way":* 

Those which the so called "self" possesses are called the "mine". That self does not [inherently] exist, and if it does not [inherently] exist, how would these [mine which are the objects of use] of that [self] be correct?

# न्ये रत्। र्शे म्वस्य ग्री स्वर्था श्री न्य र देश्व यात्र ह्ये देश है ते स्वर्था स्वर्थ है स्वर्थ स्वर्य स्वर्थ स्वर्य स्वर्थ स्वर्थ स्वर्थ स्वर्थ स्वर्थ स्वर्थ स्वर्थ स्वर्थ स्वर्य स्वर्थ स्वर्थ स्वर्य स्वर्थ स्वर्थ स्वर्य स

For example, when you ascertain that a son of a barren woman does not occur, that awareness does not engage in the thought, "The ears of that [son of a barren woman] and so forth do not exist," but it is able to eliminate superimpositions conceiving the ears of that [son of a barren woman] to exist.

Similarly, when you ascertain that the self does not exist as [its own] suchness, the conception that the eyes and so forth of that [self] exist as [their own] suchness is overcome.

# र्देन् स्टर्भे न्यान्त्रम् स्ट्रिं त्र्रेन् प्यते न्द्रेस् प्यस्त्रम् स्त्रम् स्त्रम्

Qualm: Even the Proponents of True Existence of our own Buddhist schools who assert that the person is imputedly existent do not assert that the person is ultimately established. Therefore, even they would realize that eyes and so forth are without inherent existence.

Response: In that case, since they assert gross objects such as eyes, sprouts, and so forth to be imputedly existent, they would realize them as without inherent existence.

### ने वृद्धे सुराता

5

10

15

25

[Objector:] That is so.

#### 

Response: If you accept such, it would contradict your own assertion [that Proponents of True Existence do not realize the lack of inherent existence of phenomena].

### ्धुःतुःत्यःर्शेग्रवायःयद्वययःयदेवःयेदःदुःतः<u>स</u>्चुयःयःदर्गेश्वयःयःत्य्युरःयःदरः।

Also, it would not be necessary [for Madhyamikas] to prove [to Proponents of True Existence] that sprouts and so forth do not truly exist.

### 

Further, complete paths of virtuous and non-virtuous actions are posited as continuums, and...

### क्रुवः षदः रदः विवेदः सेदः यरः वर्देदः व। वर्षे वः यर्देवः वाश्ववः वश्व

म्री:पामः नृद्यः प्रतः प्रतः

### 

...and if [the Proponents of True Existence] asserted continuums to lack inherent existence, then there would be no purpose in [the proponents of True Existence] disputing the Madhyamikas' propounding that these, like dreams, lack true existence as is set forth in Haribhadra's *Clear Meaning Commentary:* 

[The Proponents of True Existence say to us Madhyamikas:] If [all phenomena] are like dreams, then the ten non-virtues, giving and so forth would not exist whereby would not even the waking state become like the state of sleep?

# 

Thus there is a great disparity between ultimate and conventional establishment or non-establishment in the Madhyamika system.

# 15 दे दिया में श्रामुक्त र्हें व मुह्य दे दिया हु अश्वर हा सामानिक विश्व के दिवाद सामानिक विश्व के स्वाप के स् वर्षे दे प्राप्त से सामानिक के सम्मानिक के समितिक के समि

Hence it is not at all contradictory that these things are asserted by [Proponents of True Existence] as conventionalities would, from the Madhyamika perspective [have to be said to] be ultimately established and those things asserted by [the Proponents of True Existence] as ultimately established would, for the Madhyamikas, come to be conventionally established.

### देक्षश्रम्भेद्रायम्बुर्दे।

5

10

20

25

Therefore, these should be differentiated.

### म्बद्धाः म्वद्धाः म्वद्धाः म्वद्धाः म्बद्धाः म्बद्धाः म्बद्धाः म्व

Furthermore, although the imputedly existent person of these [Proponents of True Existence] and the imputedly existent person of this master [Chandrakīrti] are similar in name, the meaning is not the same.

### र्बेज पर्देव रदि वे पे प्रमाय मारा बना मी यह ना की प्रदेश का यदि खात के प्रमाय के प्रमाय के प्रमाय के प्रमाय के

For, this master asserts that these [Proponents of True Existence] do not have the view realizing the selflessness of the person.

### केंबानी प्रत्या केंद्र या हें ग्राव वापा वापा वापा केंद्र या केंद्र या केंद्र या केंद्र या केंद्र या केंद्र या विकास

5

This is because he asserts that if one has not realized the selflessness of phenomena, one has not realized the selflessness of the person.

नेश्वत्यं स्थार्षेत् ग्रीशुवाय्यव्ययं देशवर्षि । वाराचवार्त्व त्यायर्थेत् प्यस्त्रें वाश्वयः स्थार्थेत् विष्यस्थार्थेत् विष्यस्थार्थेत् ।

Therefore, since this master asserts that as long as one has not forsaken the tenet that the aggregates are substantially existent, one conceives the person also to be substantially existent, [he says that] these [Proponents of True Existence] do not realize that the person does not ultimately exist.

### [Chapter 4. Misidentifying the Object of Negation]

[579.9] गर्ने अप्यादे विंत्र गान्तु याद्ययायादि देशाया ग्राह्म

[2/2] Two: Actual Settling of Suchness

देशस्याये न्याया । वित्याया वित्याया वित्याया वित्याया वित्याया वित्याया वित्याया वित्याय के वित्याया के वित्याय के वित्याया के वित्याय के वित

The actual settling of suchness has three parts: identifying the object of negation by reasoning,<sup>1</sup> whether that negation is done by means of consequence or autonomous syllogism, and how, in dependence on doing that, to generate the view in your continuum.

[1/3] Identifying The Object Of Negation By Reasoning

This has three parts: the reason why it is necessary to identify well the object of negation, refuting other systems which [engage in]refutation without having identified the object of negation, and how the object of negation is identified in our own systems.

15 दर:र्सें है।

5

10

25

[1/3 THE REASON WHY IT IS NECESSARY TO IDENTIFY WELL THE OBJECT OF NEGATION]

Just as, for example, in order to ascertain that a certain person is not here, you must know the person who is not here.

20 यन् माओन् यान् राम्यान् विकासीन् यान् विकासि विकासि विकासि विकासि विकासि विकासि विकासि विकासि विकासि विकासि

In order to ascertain the meaning of "selflessness" or non-inherent existence, you must also identify well that self, or inherent existence which does not exist.

For, if the [meaning] generality of the object of negation does not appear well [to the mind], you will also not unerringly ascertain the negative of it.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup> Only "identifying the object of negation" is included in this dual language edition.

#### र्शेंद्रायह्यायम्

चन्नम्बर्धाते न्द्रंबर्धः स्वर्धन्। । ने स्वर्धः न्द्रंबर्धन्। ।

#### वेशम्ब्रुद्रश्यदे भ्रीर दें।

5 For, Shantideva's Engaging the Bodhisattva Deeds [9.140a] says:

Without contacting the entity which is imputed One will not apprehend the absence of that entity

## देग्यः द्रम्मा नुदेश्ये त्र्यत्रित्यत्रित्य सर्वे सम्बदः ष्यस्य ग्राहर द्रम्मा नुः सर्वे स्यान्य स्थान्य । व्य विम्नान्य स्यान्य स्वर्थः स्वर्थः सम्बद्धः सम्बद्धः सम्बद्धः स्वर्थः स्वर्थः स्वर्थः स्वर्थः स्वर्थः स्वर्थः स

With respect to this, although the different features of the objects of negation are limitless, if they are negated from their root, which brings together [all of] the objects of negation, all the objects of negation will also be refuted.

Moreover, if not doing the refutation in terms of the final subtle essential of the object of negation, there is some remainder left over, You will fall to an extreme of existence and will generate a manifest conception of the [true existence of] things whereby you cannot be released from cyclic existence.

If you engage in negation going much too far, without holding to the measure of the object of negation, you will loose belief in the stages of the dependant arising of cause and effect whereby you will fall to an extreme of annihilation and due to just that view will be led to a bad transmigration.

Therefore, it is important to identify well the object of negation, for if it is not identified, you will unquestionably generate either a view of permanence or a view of annihilation.

#### मानेश्वायान्यमानुःदेशासाञ्चेत्रायमान्योगायदेगान्ततास्यम् स्वामान्यायामानेश्वा

[2/3] SECOND, REFUTING OTHER SYSTEMS WHICH [ENGAGE IN] REFUTATION WITHOUT HAVING IDENTIFIED THE OBJECT OF NEGATION

### द्यायाः चुःर्र्स्याः देवेतः कुः कराष्ट्रियः क्रेस्याः द्यायाः प्रदान्। द्यायाः चुःर्रस्यः देवे । व्यायाः चुःर्

This has two parts: refuting and overly broad identification of the object of negation and refuting a too limited identification of the object of negation.

### 

[1/2] First, refuting an overly broad identification of the object of negation

This has two parts: stating [others'] assertions and showing their incorrectness.

#### 

[1/2] First, Stating Others Assertions

15

Nowadays, most who claim to propound the meaning of the middle way say that all phenomena ranging from forms though to exalted-knowers-of-all-aspects are refuted by the reasoning analyzing whether production and so forth are or are not established as [their own] suchness...

## है'रद्'लैग्'विक्'त्रुदक्ष'य'यरद'देग्क्ष'यक्ष'द्युद्'य'ग्रुक्ष'द्राचेद्र्य'यह्व्य'यह्व्य'यह्व्य'यह्व

because when reasoning analyzes any [phenomena] which is asserted, there does not exist even a particle that is able bear analysis and also

## 

because all four alternatives—existence, non-existence, and so forth—are refuted and there does not exist any phenomena not included in those.

## म्बद्धाः म्बद्धाः स्वतः स्व देश्वाम्बद्धाः स्वतः स्वतः

Moreover, [they assert that] a Superior's exalted wisdom perceiving suchness perceives production, cessation, bondage, release, and so forth **as not existing** in the least, and since those must be just as they are comprehended by that [exalted wisdom], production and so forth do not exist.

### मायाने भ्री पार्श्वमात्रावर्देन वाने त्याने कि पार्चेन प्रति प्रति

[They say that] if one asserts production and so forth, are these or are these not able to bear analysis by a reasoning analyzing suchness with respect to them?

## यर्चे ५ देशकायका ५ सु ५ प्यर्चे ५ सु १ देश दें १ से ५ प्यकाय दे ३ ५ देश कु १ सु १ स

If these are able to bear analysis, then there would exist things able to bear analysis by reasoning, whereby there would be truly existent things.

### <u>न्युन् से पार्वेन् संदेश से मुक्षायक्ष विम्नाया ये पेतृ संपर्व पार्वे व्युक्त स्वन्।</u>

If they are unable to bear analysis, how is it feasible that objects which have been negated by reasoning exist?

### देःचलेकः दुः श्लीःचः त्याः श्रीष्मश्चायाः विद्यान्य स्वत्यान्य स्य

Similarly, [these misinterpreters of Mādhyamika say that] if production and so forth are asserted to exist, are these or are these not established by valid cognition?

### 

In the former case, since an exhaulted wisdon perceiving suchness perceives production as non-existent, it is not feasible that [production] be established by it.

# बःश्रृत्यते श्रेषाषी भेश्याप्य श्रेष्वश्याप्य श्रुवायमाय दित्त । वित्र दित्त । वित्र प्राप्त । वित्र प्राप्त

Further, if one asserts that [production] is established by conventional eye consciousnesses and so forth, because it is **refuted** [in sūtra and by Chandrakīrti as cited below] that those **are** valid cognizers, it is not feasible that objects which have been negated by reasoning exist?

#### **नेट**'दे'दिद्देव'ग्री'ग्रुव'र्ये'यश्रा

श्रेग्दरस्यञ्च प्यतः स्त्रंत्रः श्रेश्वा । भूतः देवतः स्त्रंत्रः स्त्रे त्याः स्त्रंत्रः स्त्रे । । स्वाकाः प्रतः स्त्रे त्याः स्त्रं स्थितः स्त्रे । । स्वाकाः प्रते स्वराधिकाः स्त्रे स्थितः स्त्रे ।

#### वेशन्या

15

20

25

The King of Meditative Stabilizations Sūtra (IX.23) says:

The eye, ear, and nose [consciousnesses] are not valid cognizers. The tongue, body, and mental [consciousness] are also not valid cognizers; If these sense [consciousnesses] were valid cognizers, Of what use to anyone would the Superiors path be?

### वह्यायमण्यम् इस्रागुत्रवहेयाहेत्रक्रम् सेत्रवेशयाश्चरश्यवे द्वीमर्मे ।

Also, Chandrakīrti's *Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) Treatise on the Middle Way* says: "In all respects worldly [consciousnesses] are not valid cognizers."

An assertion that [production and so forth] exist even though they are not established by valid cognition is not feasible, for one oneself does not assert such and it is also not reasonable.

## ग्याफे क्रुं मान्यायेव व देव द्यायमधी वर्दे प्यायमधी वर्दे प्याय स्थाय क्रिया क्रिया क्रिया व देव विकास स्थाय

[Those proponents also say] that if one were to assert production, since it is not asserted ultimately, it would have to be asserted conventionally, but that is unreasonable, for Chandrakīrti's *Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) Treatise on the Middle Way* says:

देक्तिः स्वायाः श्रांदेवाश्वायः वादः विवाः वीशा । यद्वाः द्रांचा व्यवः श्रांदेवाश्वाः सेवाश्वाः श्रीवः यदी । देवाश्वादेशः श्रांचाः श्रृतः दुः व्यवः देवाश्वाः श्रीवः वा । विवादः विवादः स्वावः श्रीवः व्यवः विवादः विवादः

10

15

25

Through that reasoning through which [it is seen] on the occasion of analyzing suchness That production from self and other are not reasonable, [It is seen] that [production] is not reasonable even conventionally. If so, through what [reasoning] would your production be [established]?

## बेश्चर्त्वर्त्वर्यमञ्जे प्रायम्भे प्रायक्षिम्यदे मेग्रायक्षान्यम्भः नृत्वर्यक्षिम्यम्यक्षिम्यस्य

Thus [they feel that Chandrakīrti] says that the reasoning refuting ultimate production also refutes conventional [production].

Furthermore, [they say that] if one asserts production even though there is no production from any of the four—self other and so forth—then, in the refutation of ultimate production, it would not be refuted through refutation upon investigating the four alternatives because there would exist a production which was not any of those [four].

# स्यति मद्रस्यका क्री त्रम्ब महित्र त्यका ग्री दर्भ । । गवत त्यका क्री त्यहेग हित्र त्यका ग्री दर्भ । ।

#### উষাশাস্ত্ৰদ্ৰাঘৰাৰ্মী ।

[Also they say that] if production were from one from among the four alternatives, then it must be **from other** since one does not assert the other three [production from self, both self and other, or causelessly]. However, that is not reasonable, for Chandrakīrti's *Supplement to Nāgārjuna's Treatise on the Middle Way* says:

"Production from other does not exist even in the world."

# देवि:ध्रीरःश्ली:पार्व्यवानायः पार्देव:प्रथायवि:खित्ययः प्यतःश्लीयः स्त्री:ख्री:श्ली क्षेत्राः वाक्षावायः प्रकारितः प्रथायवि:खित्ययः प्रवास्त्रीयः प्रवास्तिः प्रवासे प्

Because of that [they say that] one should not, in the refutation of production, affix even the qualification "ultimate" for Chandrakīrti's *Clear Words* refutes the affixing of the qualification "ultimate".

## **८**दे'यदर्गः डेगः दे 'श्रुं'यायः र्श्वम्यायः श्रुद्रः तुदरः से 'दर्देदः बेरः या

Among those [who assert such] some say that they do not assert production and so forth even conventionally...

### [म<sup>.</sup>डेग] वे व ऋू ८ तु र्षे ५ य र १ वर्रे ५ डे ८ ]

...whereas some do assert [those] as existing conventionally.

#### রমশত্র'শুন'বর্ণশ্পুর'র্

15

20

25

However, all of them stretch our their necks and [boldly] explain:

A refutation by reasoning of an inherent existence, that is to say an establishment by way of their own entities, in phenomena is undeniably the system of this master [Chandrakīrti], for inherent establishment is refuted in terms of both truths; if there is thus no inherent existence, then what does exist?

# देवे 'खेर'न्याया' न्याप्त्रं त्राप्त्राया चेत्राप्त्रा चित्राया में च्याप्त्रा चित्राया चेत्राया चित्राया चित्

Therefore affixing the qualification 'ultimate' to the object of negation is the system of only the Svātantrika Madyamikas.

#### [Chapter 5. The Uncommon Feature of Mādhyamika]

[582.6] म्वेशयाने शेष्ट्रम्य प्रमुद्रायायाम्बेश

[2/2] Second: Showing That Those [Assertions] Are Incorrect

यम्भद्गः पर्ति । यम्भद्गः प्रति । यम्भद्गः । यम्भद्गः प्रति । यम्भद्गः प्रति । यम्भद्गः प्रति । यम्भद्गः । यम्भद्गः प्रति । यम्भद्गः । यम

This section has two parts, showing that those systems refute the uncommon distinguishing feature of Mādhyamika<sup>2</sup> and showing that the damages expressed do not overwhelm [our position].<sup>3</sup>

द्राची त्यामा श्रुम्मा प्रस्ता विद्राम्म विद्यामा स्थापन स्यापन स्थापन स्यापन स्थापन स्थापन

[1/2] First, showing that those systems refute the uncommon distinguishing feature of Mādhyamika

This has three parts: identifying the distinguishing feature of Mādhyamika, how those systems refute this [distinguishing feature], 4 and how a Mādhyamika responds to them. 5

**५५**:सॅं'बे।

5

10

20

[1/3] FIRST, [IDENTIFYING THE DISTINGUISHING FEATURE OF MĀDHYAMIKA]

15 रेग्रासप्तुग्रस्यायम्

दम् प्राप्त मिक्र क्षेत्र क्ष

With respect to this Nāgārjuna's Sixty Stanzas of Reasoning says:

Through this virtue may all beings,

Upon accumulating the collection of merit and exalted wisdom,

Attain the two excellences

That arise from merit and exalted wisdom.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>2</sup> Chapters 5-7.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>3</sup> Chapters 8-11.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>4</sup> Chapter 6.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>5</sup> Chapter 7.

देशम्भुद्शयाः सुर्भ वेग्याः श्रक्ष्मां भाषाः विष्याः विषयः विषयः विषयः विश्वाः विश्

In accordance with this statement, the **attainment**—by trainees who progress by way of the supreme vehicle, [the Mahayana], on the occasion of the fruit—of the two, the excellent Truth body and the excellent Form body, **depends upon** accumulating on the occasion of the path, as explained earlier<sup>6</sup>, the immeasurable collections of merit and exalted wisdom, that is, on inseparable method and wisdom.

5

15

20

This in turn, definitely relies upon attaining ascertainment with respect to the varieties, an ascertainment induced from the depths with respect to the relationship of cause and effect, [an understanding] that such and such beneficial and harmful effects arise from such and such causes, these being conventional causes and effects.

र्केश्वस्त्रस्य स्त्रित्ते । स्त्रित्ते स्त्राच्या स्त्रित्ते स्त्राच्या स्त्रित्ते स्त्रित्ते । स्त्रित्ते स्त्रिते स्त्रित्ते स्त्रित्ते स्त्रित्ते स्त्रित्ते स्त्रित्ते स्त्रिते स्त्रित्ते स्त्रित्ते स्त्रिते स्त्रित्ते स्त्रित्ते स्त्रित्ते स्त्रित्ते स्त्रित्ते स्त्रित्ते स्त्रित्ते स्त्रित्ते स्त्रिते स्तिते स्त्रिते स्त्रिते स्त्रिते स्तिते स्त्रिते स्तिते स्

It also definitely relies on attaining ascertainment with respect to the mode [of existence], an ascertainment gained from the depth that all phenomena are without even a particle of inherent existence, that is to say, establishment by way of their own entities.

For, without both of these, a training from the depths of the heart in the complete factors of the path of both method and wisdom will not occur.

दे.क्षेत्र.पचन्नाविद्यस्थान्त्रःश्चेत्रःश्चेत्रःविद्यत्त्रःश्चेत्रःवाद्यःश्चेत्रःवाद्यःश्चेत्रःवाद्यःश्चेत्रःव त्रेत्रःवचन्न्यःविचन्नाःश्चेत्रःश्चेत्रःविद्यत्त्रःश्चेत्रःविद्यत्त्रःविद्यत्त्रःविद्यत्तःव्यत्त्रःश्चेत्रःव्य

Not mistaking the essentials of the path causing attainment of the two bodies in that way at the time of the effect depends upon settling the view of the bases; the mode of settling the view upon which this depends is the gaining of ascertainment with respect to the two truths as has just been explained.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>6</sup> [in the discussion of Bodhisattvas' training, not included in this translation].

दिन्दे न्द्रायायायाम्हिम्बायाम् न्वन्याम् वद्रायुर्वे द्रम्पदायम् वायायायन्त्रम् अर्थे द्रम्यायायायम् । विद

With respect to this, except for Mādhyamikas, other persons do not know how to explain these [two truths as interpreted by Mādhyamikas] as non-contradictory, seeing them as only a collection of contradictions.

5 अर्दरश्रायाः वित्र क्षुः क्कें यदिः द्वरायदेः त्राय्याय व्यायाः विश्वायाः विश्वायः विश्वाय

However, those skillful persons possessing subtle wise and very vast intelligence, called "Mādhyamikas" through skill in the techniques for realizing the two truths, have settled [them] as without even a scent of contradiction, [thereby] finding the finality of the Conqueror's thought.

## लेश्रञ्जर्गायात्रास्यात्रास्यात्रात्रात्रात्रात्रात्रात्रात्र्यम्

In dependence on that, they generate wonderful and very great respect for our teacher and his teaching and with pure speech and words induced by that respect proclaim again and again with great voice,

Knowledgeable Ones, the meaning of emptiness, that is to say, the emptiness of inherent existence, is the meaning of dependent arising; it does not mean the non-existence of things, that is to say, and emptiness of capacity to perform functions.

यत्याः द्वेत्राचेत्रः श्रुप्तावेत्रः स्वाप्त्राच्यायाः येषाः षाव्यक्षः त्वाप्तः स्वाप्तः स्वाप्तः स्वाप्तः स्व यत्याः द्वेत्रः स्वाप्तः स्वाप्त्रः स्वाप्त्रः स्वाप्त्रः स्वाप्त्रः स्वाप्तः स्वाप्तः स्वाप्तः स्वाप्तः स्वाप

म्चित्रमान्वनाचममान्द्राचित्रम्मुवायिः सदावित्राचे । यद्वे । यद्वे द्वान्याचित्रमान्त्रम् । यद्वे द्वान्याचित्रम् । यद्वे द्वान्याचित्रम्यचित्रम् । यद्वे द्वान्यचित्रम्यचित्रम् । यद्वे द्वान्यचित्रम्यचित्रम्यचित्रम्यचित्रम्यचित्रम्याचित्रम्यम्यचित्रम्यचित्रम्यचयम्यचयवित्रम्यचयवित्रम्यवित्रम्यम्यचित्रम्यवित्रम्य

## क्षुयायायदी विंता धीता है।

10

15

20

25

Scholars of our own [i.e., Buddhist] schools. Proponents of True Existence, even though they have great training in many topics of learning do not accept this Mādhyamika view, and their dispute with the Mādhyamikas is just this thought:

If all phenomena are empty, without any inherent existence, that is to say, establishment by way of their own entities, then there is no way to posit all the presentations of cyclic existence and nirvāṇa — bondage, release, and so forth.

#### इ.से.जश

5

10

25

30

मायाके त्रिः त्रमासाम् क्षेत्रम् ।

त्रम् त्राचारे प्रदेश्याचारे स्वरम् ।

त्रम् त्राचारे प्रदेश प्रदेश प्रदेश ।

व्रम् त्राचारे प्रदेश प्रदेश प्रदेश ।

व्रम् त्राचारे प्रदेश प्रदेश प्रदेश ।

व्रम् त्राचारे प्रदेश प्रदेश ।

For, Nāgārjuna's *Treatise on the Middle Way* (XXIV.1) [citing an objection by the Proponents of True Existence], says:

If all there are empty,

There would be no arising and no disintegration;

It would follow that for you [Mādhyamikas]

The four noble truths would not exist.

## बेश्चार्यायवेत् ग्रीकार्भ्रेत्वाञ्चे अर्भ्भेत्वाञ्च अर्थायात्याचेत्रायवेत् भ्रीत्वत् प्रायाप्य स्वाप्तायात्रा

Thus they say that is [phenomena] are empty of inherent existence, the production, disintegration, and the four truths would not be feasible.

#### 15 ईं ५ हें बा त्या

म्याने निर्देश्याचे व्यवस्त स्त्री ।
स्टायने वा मुन्याने स्याने स्त्री के स्त्री स्त्

Also, Nāgārjuna's *Refutation of Objections*, stanza 1) [sets forth as objection by the Proponents of True Existence]:

If an inherent existence of all things

Does not exist in anything,

Then your words are also without inherent existence

And cannot refute inherent existence.

# [584]'लेश'क्षेत्रा'या'स्टा'यतित्र'ये प्रस्तायतित्र'यतित्र'या'यत्त्र'या'यत्त्र्या'या'त्र्या'यत्त्र्या'या'त्र्या'यत्त्र्या'या'त्र्या'यत्त्र्या'या'त्र्या'यत्त्र्या'या'त्र्या'यत्त्र्या'या'त्र्या'यत्त्र्या'या'त्र्या'यत्त्र्या'या'त्र्या'यत्त्र्यां व्याप्तत्त्र्या'यत्त्

Saying that if words are without inherent existence, they cannot refute inherent existence nor prove a lack of inherent existence, [the Proponents of True Existence] debate [with the Mādhyamikas] within the thought that if there is no inherent existence, then objects produced, producers, as well as activities of refutation and proof would not be feasible.

#### वित्रात्रे स्टायबेत्र वर्षे वा प्रवे सेवार्या सामु ने देश सम्मान स्टायन सम्मान स्टायन सम्मान समान सम्मान सम

With this [mode of debate], they debate within understanding that the reasonings refuting inherent existence refute all activities.

देश्वात् निर्देश्वार्य मञ्जूष्य प्राप्त प्रतिश्वाया प्रतिश्वाया प्रतिश्वाया प्रतिश्वाया प्रतिश्वाया प्रतिश्वाय इस्राप्तावया वस्रश्चात्र प्रतिश्वाया प्रतिश्व

Therefore, when Proponents of True Existence and Mādhyamikas debate with respect to their uncommon tents, they debate only about the suitability or unsuitability of positing all the presentations of cyclic existence and nirvāṇa within an emptiness of inherent existence.

रदावी दिस्त्रां स्वाया प्रत्या स्वाया स्व

Hence, the allowability of asserting all the presentations of cyclic existence and nirvāṇa — objects produced, producers, refutation, proof, and so forth — within the non-existence of even a particle of inherent existence, that is to say, establishment by way of [objects] own entities, is a distinguishing feature of Mādhyamika. The twenty fourth chapter of Nāgārjuna's *Treatise on the Middle Way* (XXIV.13ñ14) says:

क्केंब्र-तु:बयःयरःदशुरःयःद्यी । क्केंद्र-यःदबद्दःयःअःधेवःयश्चा । र्खेद्र-वे:क्केंद्र-वेद्दःया । यदःदेःदःयःअःदबदःर्दे। ।

The consequence [expressing] the fallacy [that actions, agents, and so forth are unpositable] Is not correct with respect to [the Mādhyamika] emptiness; Thus your abandonment of emptiness Is not correct with respect to me.

च्यात्रक्षं स्था क्षेत्र स्ट्राय स्था । चे त्यात्रक्षं क्षेत्र क्षेत्र स्ट्राय स्था । चे त्यात्रक्षं क्षेत्र क्षेत्र स्ट्राय स्था । चे त्यात्रक्षं क्षेत्र क्षेत्र स्ट्राय ।

बेश्यद्रम्

5

10

15

20

25

30

In that [system] in which emptiness is Suitable, all is suitable; In that [system] in which emptiness is not Suitable, all is not suitable.

# म्याप्ते तर्ने न्या गुत्र क्षें रात्ता विश्व क्षेया शा भी क्षेत्र प्राप्त क्षेत्र क्षेत्र प्राप्त क्षेत्र क्षेत्र क्षेत्र प्राप्त क्षेत्र क्र

[Nāgārjuna] says that **not only** does the fallacy [expressed above by the Proponents of True Existence, XXIV.1], "If all these are empty, [there would be no arising and no disintegration]..." and so forth, **not arise** for those who propound an absence of inherent existence, **but also** production, disintegration, and so forth are suitable within a position of emptiness of inherent existence, whereas they are not suitable within a position of non-emptiness of inherent existence.

#### रे.क्षर.तरा क्र्या.यश्वतात्वश

5

10

15

25

30

## लेबार्बेग्बारीयाल्टायमेंदावबायम्दाया

Thus, Chandrakīrti's Clear Words [making the transition between XXIV.13 and 14] also says:

Not only does the consequence [expressing] fallacy set forth [by Proponents of True Existence] just not apply to our position, but also [in our position] all presentations of the truths and so forth are very correct. In order to indicate this, [Nāgārjuna] said [in XXIV.14],

In that [system] in which emptiness is suitable...

This, Chandrakīrti makes an explanation citing the passage [from Nāgārjuna's *Treatise*].

# 20 न्तुःअः इः न्ररः रनः न्तुं न् रहेनः न्तुं वाः प्रश्नाहेन रत्ने त्याः न्तुः वाहेन् वाः न्तुः स्वाहेन् वाः विकारा क्षेत्रः वाहेन् वाः विकारा क्षेत्रः वाहेन् वाः विकारा क्षेत्रः वाहेन् वाः विकारा क्षेत्रः वाहेन् वाः विकारा वि

The twenty-sixth chapter of Nāgārjuna's *Treatise on the Middle Way* teaches the stages of the production in the forward process of the twelve [links] of dependent-arising and the stages of their cessation in the reverse process.

#### रवः द्वेद 'देर'सू**र्य**'गार्डें 'केर'रदः प्रविद 'दर्गेग'यर'सईद 'र्दे। ।

Twenty-five chapters mainly refute inherent existence.

र्याचेत्रिः केरावित्यायस्य स्थापित्वत्ते स्थाप्त स्थाप्त स्थाप्त स्थाप्त स्थाप्त स्थाप्त स्थाप्त स्थाप्त स्थाप स्थापित स्थापति स्

The twenty-fourth chapter, that analyzing the four noble truths, extensively settles how all presentations of cyclic existence and nirvāṇa, arising, disintegration, and so forth, are unsuitable within a non-emptiness of inherent existence and how all those are suitable within the emptiness of inherent existence.

### रयः चुेद्र तद्दे रयः चुेद्र ग्वाब्द : बस्य उद्दर्भ त्याद्वेद्र विकाद्में कारा धिदार्वे।

Hence, one needs to know to carry this [twenty-fourth] chapter over to the other chapters.

देश्वात्रात्रात्त्रात्रात्त्रेत्राञ्चात्रात्त्रेत्त्याद्वस्यश्चात्रात्वेत्रस्यत्यात्रम् । भ्राप्तात्वेत्त्रस्यात्त्रम् स्थात्वात्रस्य स्वात्त्रस्य स्वात्त्रस्य स्वात्त्रस्य स्वात्त्रस्य स्वात्त्रस्य स

Therefore the present-day proposition by those who claim to propound the meaning of the middle way that causes and effects — produced, producers and so forth — are necessarily not suitable within an absence of inherent existence is the system of the Proponents of True Existence.

यार्ष्व वर्षे मुं भूति क्षेत्र क्षेत्

Hence, it is the assertion of the protector Nāgārjuna that one must seek the emptiness of inherent existence and the middle path in dependence on just the presentation of cause and effect — the production and cessation of such and such effects in dependence on such and such causes and conditions.

#### रयाचेदालेरायलेयाता

15

20

25

30

The twenty-fourth chapter of [Nāgārjuna's Treatise on the Middle Way, XXIV.18-19] says:

हेत्रःकेदःत्रवेत्यःययःत्ववुदःयःगदः। । देःवेःक्षॅदःयःकेदःदुःयन्दाः। देःवेःयहेतःतश्चाद्यश्चायःश्ले।। देःकेदःदवुःस्रवेःत्यस्रःधेतःवें।।

> That which arises dependently We explain as emptiness. That [emptiness] is dependent designation; Just it is the middle path.

Because there is no phenomenon That is not a dependent-arising, There is no phenomenon That is not empty.

## खियार्चे लेखायर्ज्ञे मान्यास्था क्षेत्र प्राच्या ख्यायर मास्यास्था या तर्ने त्या क्षु क्षेत्र त्या क्षेत्र त्य वियार्च लेखायर्ज्ञे मान्या स्था क्षेत्र प्राच्या ख्याय प्राच्या विया प्राच्या क्षेत्र स्था विया चित्र त्या क्ष

Do not turn around this statement [of Nāgārjuna's] that dependent-arisings are necessarily empty of inherent existence and propound that those things produced in dependence on causes and conditions are necessarily inherently established.

### दे'प्रविवर्र्ङ्र्र्इंद्रः ह्यूँग्'यश्यागुर्'।

5

10

15

20

Nāgārjuna's Refutation of Objections similarly says (stanza 70 and concluding homage):

मद्रत्यः र्क्केद्रः केद्रायदे दे श्री द्रायाः विद्याः द्रियाः द्रियः द्रियाः द्रियः द्

For whom emptiness is possible All objects are possible; For whom emptiness in not possible Nothing is possible.

याद्यत्वियाःश्रृंदः द्वाद्यत्वाद्यत्यः विद्याः विद्या

I bow down to the Buddha, Unequalled, supreme of speakers, [who taught] emptiness, dependent arising, And the middle path as of one meaning. लेशन्दः। क्रॅ्रंन्लेन्यत्त्वःश्चायः स्थायः। न्देश्वः वस्यश्चन्यस्य स्यायः वितः श्चेशः। क्रॅ्रंन्यः स्वतः यस्य न्देश्वः स्थायः [586]ः श्चीः। हेतः यश्चनः श्चीयः वितः यस्य विवायः।। सर्व्य स्थायः स्वेनः यस्य वित्य स्थायः विवायः।।

Also, Nāgārjuna's, Seventy Stanzas on Emptiness (stanza 68) says:

The unequalled Tathagata thoroughly taught That because all things
Are empty of inherent existence
Things are dependent arisings.

### वेशन्दा देग्रायानुगानुगानुगाना

5

10

15

20

25

Also, Nāgārjuna's Sixty Stanzas of Reasoning (stanzas 43ñ45) says;

म्यार्ग्यम्भः विश्वास्त्रेष्ठः स्वरं ।

प्रमाण्याः स्वरं माहेष्ठः स्वरं व्यव्याः ।

प्रमाण्याः स्वरं स्वरं स्वरं व्यव्याः ।

प्राच्चां स्वरं स्वरं स्वरं स्वरं स्वरं स्वरं ।

Those who adhere to the self

Or the world as not dependent

Those who adhere to the self Or the world as not dependent Are, alas, captivated by views Of permanence and impermanence.

यटः द्याः यहेवः वद्याः द्वाः स्थाः । देः केदः दुः वेः श्रुवः वद्दे दः याः । देः द्वाः व्याः व्याः व्याः क्षेत्रः । देः द्वाः वेः व्याः व्याः व्याः । देः द्वाः वेः व्याः व्याः ।

How could those faults of permanence And so forth not accrue also To those who assert dependently [arisen] Things to be established as [their own] suchness?

5

15

20

25

Those who assert dependently [Arisen] things as not real but Not unreal, like a moon in water, Are not captivated by [such wrong] views.

### डेबान्दा यहेषाहेबायबायन्बायमायक्ष्र्रायायबागुदा

Also Nāgārjuna's Praise of the Supermundane [Buddha] (21-2) says:

Suffering is asserted
By bad logicians to be produced
From itself, other, both, or causelessly;
You [Buddha] said it arises dependently.

हेन् उद्यास स्थान स्यान स्थान स्थान

You asserted that whatever arises
Dependently is empty;
That there is no self-powered things
Is your unequalled lion's roar.

ढ़ॖऀॸॱॹॖऀॱॸॣ॔ॿॱढ़ज़ॹॸज़ढ़ढ़ॖऀॹॹॣॺज़ॣऒॕॹॱॸढ़ज़ढ़ॗॴॱक़ॣॕढ़ॱढ़ऻढ़ॖॹॹॣॖढ़ॴढ़ॖऻ ढ़ॖढ़ॱॹॖऀॱॸॣ॔ॿॱढ़ऀॱढ़ॹॸॱॸॱढ़ढ़ॖॱॿॖऀॱॹॹॣॿ॑ॻॹॖऀॱॹऀॴॴख़ऀॿॱॹॖॣॾढ़ॴॣढ़ॖढ़ॴॣॿऀॱॶढ़ॹढ़ऻ ढ़ॖढ़ॱॹॖऀॱॸॣ॔ॿॱढ़ऀॱढ़ॹॸॱॸॱढ़ढ़ऀॱॿॖऀॱॹॹॣॿ॔ॻॹॖऀॱॹऀॴॴख़ऀॿॱॹॖॣॸग़ॹॣॿॱॹॣॸॴॢॿॱॸढ़ऻॖ

Thus [Nāgārjuna] says that by reason of being dependent-arisings [phenomena] are just empty of inherent existence. This dawning of the meaning of dependent-arising as the meaning of emptiness, that is to say, no inherent existence, is the uncommon system of the protector Nāgārjuna.

देश्वान् स्टायित्वेत् स्त्रेन् प्रति स्त्रेत् प्रति स्त्रेत् प्रति स्त्रेत् स्त्रेत

Therefore, taking this emptiness which is a lack of inherent existence from the Mādhyamika's own side, but, uncomfortable with making in one's own system a presentation of dependently arisen cause and effect, relying [for that] on others, and so forth, is not the meaning of dependent-arising.

गद्रात्यः क्रूट्रायाः केद्रास्ट्राया

5

10

15

दे'त्य'बेश्चार्ययवित्र'येन्यम्परमी'त्यम्भाष्येव्ययदे'त्यम्भाने'त्य'द्योच्चर्यात्ये'हेव'द्यवेत्यवश्चश्चर्यत्य' द्वीर-र्से।

For [Nāgārjuna's statement in the Treatise on the Middle Way,

In that [system] in which emptiness is suitable ...

says that all the dependent-arisings of cyclic existence and nirvāṇa are feasible in the system which is a system of an absence of inherent existence.

### [Chapter 6. Dependent-Arising and Emptiness]

#### र्देन क्रूं र हिर तर्रे र प्रते सुँग्राया तर्वे र तर्वा वस्रा उर रहर सुग्रा वर्षे द स्रु स्रोता

5

15

What is the system of the suitability of all cyclic existence and nirvāṇa within a position asserting emptiness?

Those who propound that all things are just empty of inherent existence propound such by reason of [things'] arising in dependence on causes and conditions. This will be explained later.

This being the case, dependent-arising is feasible within that [emptiness of inherent existence], and when that [i.e., dependent-arising] is feasible, suffering is also feasible, for sufferings must be posited to that which arises in dependence on causes and conditions, and suffering is not suitable in that which does not arise dependently.

When true sufferings exist, then the sources from which they arise, the cessation that are the stopping of those sufferings, and the paths proceeding to those [cessations] are feasible; thereby, [all] four truths exist.

When the four truths exist, then [respectively] knowledge of them, abandonment of them, actualization of them, and cultivation of the paths of them are suitable; when those exist, then all, the Three Jewels and so forth, are suitable.

#### दे'सूर'यद्। केंग'ग्राक्षय'यहा

5

10

15

20

25

In that way, Chandrakīrti's Clear Words says:

म् म् यद्भार्थः व्याप्तः व्याप्तः स्वाप्तः स्वापतः स्वाप्तः स्वापतः स

For that [system] in which the emptiness of inherent existence of all things is suitable, all the [above]-mentioned are suitable.

How? Because we call dependent-arising "emptiness";

देतः श्वीरः माद्रायः श्वेदः यदेतः यदेतः यदेतः यदेवः श्वेदः यद्येयः यरः यश्चिदः यः यद्यः यद्यः यद्येयः यरः यद्य स्टायः देः त्यः त्याव्यम् अत्यते यदेतः यदेवः यदेवः यद्येयः यरः वश्चिदः यः यद्यः यद्यः यद्येयः यरः वश्चिदः यः य

therefore, for that [system] in which this emptiness is suitable, dependent-arising is suitable, and for that [system] in which dependent-arising is suitable, the four noble truths are reasonable.

How? Because just those which arise dependently are sufferings, not those which do not arise dependently. Since those [which arise dependently] are without inherent existence, they are empty.

द्यू xर्भे । xर्भे xर्भ

When sufferings exist, the sources of suffering, the cessations of suffering, and the paths progressing to the cessation of suffering are suitable.

देते:धुरःभ्रुषाःत्रभ्रवःष्टिश्चःश्चःक्षेश्वःयःदरःगुतःत्वुरःभ्रुदःयःदरः। वर्षेषःयःश्चर्ततःतुःग्वःयःदरःवश्चः। ।

Therefore, thorough knowledge of suffering, abandonment of sources, actualization of cessation, and cultivation of paths are also suitable.

भूग'यभूय'य'र्सेग्रायदे'यदेव'य'र्सेद्राःसु'वेद्राय'य'र्सेग्राय'र्सेन्द्रादे'दव्राद्य'द्र्यस'तुद्र्यस'र्द्रायर'दशुर'र्दे॥

When thorough knowledge and so forth of the truths, sufferings and so forth, exist, the fruits are suitable.

#### **०**नुबानुःहुस्रबार्षेद्दात्रात्ववानुःवान्तव्यान्तानुदादिः। ।

When the fruits exist, abiders in those fruits are suitable;

## दच्यातुःत्यःवाव्यायः द्वाःर्षेद् व्यवे (वृवा्यायः द्वाःस्टः चरः दशुरः दे।

when abiders in those fruits exist, approachers to [those fruits] are suitable.

### 

When approachers to and abiders in the fruit exist, the spiritual community is suitable.

When the noble truths exist, the excellent doctrine is also suitable, and

### ५८। प्रति:क्रॅबान्दर्वो (५५५ व्लॅन्व वे ब्लड्बा सुबा ग्राम्स्टर्य स्ट्यू सः स्

when the excellent doctrine and spiritual community exist, then Buddhas are suitable.

### देवे भ्री मार्जी वास केंगा मार्स साम मार्जि मार्जी वास के मार्जी के मार्जि क

Therefore, the Three Jewels are also suitable.

# $\alpha$ है $\alpha$ , $\alpha$

All special realizations of all mundane and supramundane topics are also suitable as well as the proper and improper, the effects of those, and all worldly conventions.

### देवे:ध्रीर:दे:क्षरःवा

5

10

15

20

Therefore, in that way, [Nāgārjuna says, XXIV.14ab],

## यादायाः क्रेंदायाः केदासुदायादे । या स्रम्भाउदासुदायमा यशुकार्ये।

For that [system] in which emptiness is suitable, all is suitable.

For that [system] in which emptiness is not suitable, dependent-arising would not exist, whereby all is unsuitable.

#### बेश्राम्बुदश्रायश्च। सुदाश्चीसुदान्नीदेशार्षेद्रायाद्वाश्चीदायात्वार्मीयसः चुर्दे।

Therefore, [here the meaning of] "suitable" and "unsuitable" is to be understood as those things' existing and not existing.

## 

As cited earlier, an objection [by the Proponents of True Existence, to the Madhyamika position] was set forth in Nāgārjuna's *Refutation of Objections:* 

[If an inherent existence of all things

Does not exist in anything,

10

15

20

25

30

Then your words are also without inherent existence

And cannot refute inherent existence (stanza 1)]

In answer to that, the master [Nāgārjuna] clearly gives the answer that activities are feasible within an absence of inherent existence. The *Refutation of Objections* (stanza 22) says:

न्द्रसम्बर्धसम्बर्धन्तः स्वास्ति । नेत्रे म्ब्रॅन्डिन्डिकान्तुः न्द्रम् । स्टान्बिका सम्बर्धन्तः सम्बर्धन्तः स्वास्ति । स्टान्बिका स्वेद्रस्थितः सम्बर्धाः ।

Is just without inherent existence.

We propound that which is the dependent-arising Of things as "emptiness"; For, that which is a dependent-arising

बेशमञ्जूदशः भेदः। देवे : सदः वर्षेयः यशः गुदः।

Also, his [Nāgārjuna's] own commentary to this [the Commentary on the "Refutation of Objections"] says:

You [Proponents of True Existence], not understanding the meaning of the emptiness of things and seeking a point of censure, propound, "Because your words [that is, the words of you Madhyamikas] are without inherent existence, refutation of the inherent existence of things is not feasible."

वर्देरवे द्रिंश ये इस्रमायहेव वस्य हुर या मर धेव या दे वे हेंदर या हे द धेव वे ।

Here [in the Madhyamika] that which is the dependent-arising of things is emptiness.

Why? Because of being just without inherent existence.

Those things which arise dependently do not have inherent existence because of being without inherent existence.

Why? Because of having reliance on causes and conditions.

If things had inherent existence, they would exist even without causes and conditions; since such is not the case, they are without inherent existence.

### देशवःश्र्रंदःयर्देःलेशन्तुःचरःवळदःद्री।

5

10

15

20

25

Therefore, we speak of them as "empty".

## ने'चबेब'तु'द्रेदे'र्क्केषा'ग्रुट'हेब'र्डेट'रुबेल'यर'रुबुट्'च'षेब'हे'देदे'खेर'रूट'चबेब'ग्रेन'र्दे। ।

Similarly, my words also are dependent-arisings and therefore are without inherent existence.

Because they are just without inherent existence, that they are said to be "empty" is correct.

Because pots, woolen cloth, and so forth are dependent-arisings, they are empty of inherent existence but are able [respectively] to hold and receive honey, water, and milk soup and to thoroughly protect from cold, wind, and sun.

Just so, my words also, because of being dependent-arisings are without inherent existence but can thoroughly establish that things are without inherent existence.

5

10

15

20

# दे'त्य'र्ह्चिद्'ग्री'क्केंग्'र्र्य्यतेव्'र्योद्'र्य'क्तेद्'यां वेत्र'र्य्ये व्यवस्थित्'र्य्ये व्यवस्थित्'र्याच्यात्रेव्यं व्यवस्थित्'याच्यात्रेव्यं व्यवस्थित्'याच्यात्रेव्यं व्यवस्थित्'याच्यात्रेव्यं व्यवस्थित्'याच्यात्रेव्यं व्यवस्थित् विष्यस्थित् विष्यस्य स्थात्रे विष्यस्य स्थात्रे विष्यस्य स्थात्रे विष्यस्य स्थात्रे विष्यस्य स्थात्रे विष्यस्य स्थात्रे स्थात्रे स्थात्रे स्थात्रे स्थात्रे स्थात्रे स्थात्यस्य स्थात्रे स्थात्यस्यस्य स्थात्रे स्थात्रे स्थात्रे स्थात्रे स्थात्रे स्थात्रे स्यात्रे स्थात्रे स्थात्रे स्थात्रे स्थात्रे स्यात्रे स्थात्रे स्यात्रे स्थात्रे स्यात्रे स्यात्रे स्थात्रे स्यात्रे स्थात्रे स्यात्रे स्यात्रे स्थात्रे स्यात्रे स्थात्रे स्यात्रे स्थात्रे स्थात्रे स्यात्रे स्यात्रे स्थात्रे स्यात्रे स्यात्रे स्यात्रे स्यात्यस्य स्यात्रे स्यात्यस्य स्यात्यस्य स्यात्यस्य स्यात्रे स्यात्रे स्यात्यस्यस्य स्यात्यस्यस्यस्यस्यस्यस्

Therefore, that which is propounded [by you] with respect to this, saying, "because your words are just without inherent existence, it is not feasible that they refute the inherent existence of all things," is not suitable.

Thus [Nāgārjuna] speaks very clearly about the counter-pervasion that whatever is inherently established does not rely on causes and conditions and the pervasion that whatever relies on causes and conditions is without inherent existence and says very clearly that non-inherent existent words can perform the activities of refutation and proof.

मृत्रेवायामहेवावशासुवावशास्त्रेवार्थेन्याप्त्राच्याप्त्राच्यायाम् स्वात्त्रेवार्थेन्यायाम् स्वात्त्रेवार्थेन्य मृत्रेवायामहेवात्र्यास्त्रेवार्थेन्यास्त्रेवार्थेन्यायाम् स्वात्त्रेवार्थेन्यायाम् स्वात्त्रेवार्थेन्यायाम् स्व

What need to speak of the two ñ dependent-arising, the production and cessation of thoroughly afflicted and very pure phenomena in dependence on causes and conditions, and non-inherent existence ñ coming together in a common locus.

दे.दर्.चदुःहेब.दचुलार्.छेर्.स्टाचबुब.बुर.तम्ह्र्बशायदुःश्चिश्यक्ष्यःच । इ.दर्.चदुःहेब.दचुलार्.छेर्.स्टाचबुब.बुर.तम्ह्र्बशायदुःश्चिश्यक्ष्यःच । इ.दर्.चदुःहेब.दचुलार्.छेर्.स्टाचबुब.बुर.तम्ह्र्बशायदुःश्चिश्यक्ष्यःच ।

This [system] in which just such dependent-arising serves as the unsurpassed reason for realizing non-inherent existence should be known as the distinguishing feature of only the wise Madhyamikas.

त्र्युर्यः प्रेति । । त्रीत्रः प्रमेत्रः त्रेत्रः त्राचित्रः त्रित्रः त्रीत्रः त्रित्रः त्रीत्रः त्रीत्र

And, if, holding that dependent production and dependent cessation are necessarily established by way of their own entities, you refute the depending-arising of production and cessation with the reasoning refuting inherent existence, then [that reasoning], like a god who has turned into a demon, will become a great obstacle to finding the meaning of the middle way as it actually is.

# [590]'दे'क्ष्र्रत्र क्रेंब्राङ्ग अञ्चल्य स्टाची दें विद्याचायते स्टायावेव ह्ला उंशायाट ये द्याया द्रवाया वृक्षु त्रव्याची त्रवेशाया व्यास्टा स्वायाची देवाया व्यास्टा स्वायाची क्ष्याची त्रवेशाया व्यास्टा स्वायाची क्ष्याची त्रवेशाया व्यास्टा स्वायाची त्रवेशायाची त्रवेशाय

Thus, if it is the case that 1) when you induce ascertainment that phenomena do not have even a particle of inherent existence, that is to say, establishment by way of their own entities, you have no way to induce ascertainment in your own system with respect to the relationship of cause and effect and must rely on others and so forth [as do the Tibetans who negate too much] or...

# कुष्व्यक्षात्यः स्टात्य्वेषः मी देश्वायायेष्यक्षायः स्टात्यवेषः स्टात्यवेषः स्टात्यवेषः स्वात्यः स्टात्यवेषः स्वात्यः स्वतः स्वात्यः स्वात्य

2) when you induce ascertainment well in your own system with respect to cause and effect, you have no way to induce ascertainment through your own system with respect to non-inherent existence and claim that one must interpret [in another way] the thought [of Buddha] with respect to [his speaking of] the absence of inherent existence [as do the Proponents of True Existence], ...

### ५.४५.५४.४५.४५.४५.४५.४५.४५.४५

5

10

...then know that you have not yet gained the Madhyamika view.

#### 

As causes for gaining the view, you should take as a basis the pure maintenance of the ethics you have promised [to maintain], and thereupon strive by way of many approaches to accumulate the collections and purify obstructions, and, relying on the wise, make effort at hearing and thinking.

# 20 दे.पर्यत्रः श्रूप्तः श्रूप्तः स्थायः पर्वेद्याया गाविद्या स्थायः देश्चित् स्थायः प्रस्ति स्थायः स्यायः स्थायः स्यायः स्थायः स्थायः

Since this composite of the two, inducing ascertainment with respect to such appearance and emptiness, almost does not occur, the view of the middle way is very difficult to gain. Thinking of this, Nāgārjuna says in the twenty-fourth chapter of the *Treatise on the Middle Way* (XXIV.12)

देख्वैरःबेद्दायश्चित्रःविद्यायश्चित्रः श्वायःयदेःश्चन्यादेःविद्यायश्चितःश्चरःवद्याः। स्वाप्तःविद्यायःविद्यायःविद्यायः स्वाप्तःविद्यायःविद्यायः स्वाप्तःविद्यायःविद्यायः स्वाप्तःविद्यायः स्वाप्तःविद्यायः स्वाप्तःविद्यायः स्वाप्तःविद्यायः स्वाप्तः स्वापि स्वाप्तः स्वाप्तः स्वाप्तः स्वाप्तः स्वाप्तः स्वाप्तः स्

Therefore, knowing that for those of weak mind The depths of this doctrine are difficult to realize, The mind of the Subduer turned away From teaching this doctrine.

### बेबान्दा देव केव सेदाय श्रवागुरा

5

20

25

Nāgārjuna's *Precious Garland* (116-18) says:<sup>7</sup>

दे:विषा:ख्रायदि:श्रीःषार्थदःविद्या ।

हषा:पु:श्रूदःचयदःषादःषी:श्रेषाः।

हषा:पु:श्रूदःचयदःषादःषी:श्रेषाः।

हेश्री:श्रूदःचयदःषादःषी:श्रेषाः।

हेश्री:श्रूदःचयदःषादःषी:श्रेषाः।

विक्षंत्राक्ष्याम्यस्यात्त्रात्त्वा ।

विक्षांत्राक्ष्याम्यस्य ।

When the body, which is unclean, Coarse, and an object of the senses, Does not stay in the mind [as unclean], Although it is all the time in view,

117 Then how could this doctrine Which is most subtle, profound, Baseless, and not manifest, Easily appear to the mind?

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>7</sup> This is Hopkin's translation from *Buddhist Advice For Living & Liberation*.

क्रॅंबरद्देः बयः द्वेरः क्रेंचें स्थेषा । वेश्वर्यः द्वायः यः यद्वर्यः द्वायः क्रुंद्दः दे। । देवर्यः द्वायः यः यद्वरः क्वायः द्वायः व्यायः । क्रेंबर्यः व्यायः यव्यायः व्यायः व्यायः व्यायः व्यायः ।

5

20

25

118 Realizing that because of its profundity this doctrine Is difficult for beings to understand, The Buddha, the Subduer, [at first] Turned away from teaching doctrine.

### बेबायमूदायर्डेबाद्यामुदार्याम् अवाद्यान्यान्यान्यान्यात्रात्याम् अद्यायाः विदार्वे।।

Thus it is said in treatises and scripture that [the view of the middle way] is very difficult to realize.

देःक्षः अप्येवः प्रमात्वः व्यवः प्रकाष्ट्रवाष्ट्यवाष्ट्यवाष्ट्यवाष्ट्यवाष्ट्यवाष्ट्यवाष्ट्यवाष्ट्यवाष्ट्यवाष्ट्यव

Unlike that, some mistake the meaning of statements in certain texts that settle the lack of inherent existence through the reasoning analyzing whether pots and so forth are one or different from their parts;

when, upon analyzing whether pots and so forth are any of their parts ñ lip, neck, and so forth ñ they do not find them as any of those, they induce the ascertainment, "There are no pots."

ने त्रकान् में त्राम्य त्यादर ने त्रुक्त न्यान निर्मात्य त्या का त्या की त्या की की

Then, analyzing similarly also the analyzer, they ascertain, "There is not analyzer."

देविःक्वंद्रिंद्राधानव्यक्षे हेद्द्रात्वयायायाः व्यव्यव्यक्षेत्रात्रात्वेत्रत्वेत्रात्वेत्रात्वेत्रत्वेत्रात्वेत्रत्वेत्तत्वेत्रत्वेत्तत्वेत्रत्वेत्रत्वेत्रत्वेत्रत्वेत्रत्वेत्रत्वेत्रत्वेत्त्वेत्रत्वेत्रत्व

At that time, thinking, "If an analyzer is not to be found, who is there that knows, 'Pots and so forth no not exist'?", they say, "[Things] do not exist and also do not not exist." Were one to posit the inducing of such erroneous ascertainment by way of certain counterfeit reasonings as having gained the [Madhyamika] view, then this [gaining of the view] would appear to be the easiest of things.

5

10

Therefore, those with intelligence should induce ascertainment, undivertable by others, with respect to the statements in the scriptures of definitive meaning and in pure Madhyamika texts — treatises commenting on the thought of those [scriptures] — that the meaning of emptiness is the meaning of dependent-arising, this distinguishing feature of the wise Madhyamikas, the subtle topic that is the thought of the Superior [Nāgārjuna] and his [spiritual] son [Āryadeva] and was commented on in complete form in particular by the master Buddhapalita and the glorious Chandrakīrti, this mode of bestowing ascertainment of the absence of inherent existence in dependence on depending-arising, and this way in which things empty of inherent existence dawn as cause and effect.

#### ग्रेश्चायास्यासानेसाने हिन्द्रमानगायते हुंयाते।

[2/3] Second, How Those Systems Refute This [Distinguishing Feature of Madhyamika]

### दे सुरस्यर्गे वर्षे सुर्भुता ग्री खुन्या

5

10

15

20

25

Thus, this system of the protector Nāgārjuna is that:<sup>8</sup>

### कॅबार्स्सबायायरामी दें विश्वायायर यह यह विद्यास्य विद्या

Phenomena do not have even a particle of inherent existence, that is, establishment by way of their own entities.

Also, if there were inherent establishment, one could not make all the presentations of cyclic existence and nirvāṇa, and it is not suitable not to make these presentations. Hence, all presentations of bondage, release, and so forth are to be posited, whereby one must definitely assert no inherent existence.

However, [it seems that] you [misinterpreters of Madhyamika] say:

### हिन् उगान्दिकार्या द्वस्थाया सदावी दिन्दिका शुवायदि सदाविका सेन्व गावका से विवार्षित्।

When things have no inherent existence, that is establishment by way of their own entities, then what else is there?

Therefore, without it being necessary to affix a qualification such as "ultimately" in the refutation of bondage, release, production, cessation, and so forth, [just those] are refuted by the reasoning refuting inherent existence.

## 

If you say this, think about how you could not be refuting [Nāgārjuna's system in which] within no inherent existence it is allowable to posit bondage, release, arising, disintegration, and so forth.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>8</sup> This isn't a quote; its indented for typographical emphasis, as is the contrasting statement below.

न्याने देश्यान्याने स्थाने विष्याने विष्याने विषय के विषय के त्याने क्ष्याने क्ष्या

You might think: "The assertion of the master [Chandrakīrti] is that the presentations of cyclic existence and nirvāṇa ñ bondage, release, and so forth ñ are [made] conventionally, and we also assert these conventionally. Hence, there is no fault."

#### देवे देग्राम्य या सामित है।

5

10

15

20

25

30

This is not reasonable, and the reason is as follows.

यदेःस्मार्श्वेतःत्र्वेतःत्रुःचतेःचतेन्यःत्रे। बःक्षुदःतुत्दःक्वेत्रात्र्यःस्मार्थःस्यःष्ट्रीःहःर्वेत्रःश्चुतःयतेःस्यःविदःयःविदःग्चः वर्देदःय।

Even you accept that the master Chandrakīrti's assertion is that phenomena do not have inherent existence, that is establishment by way of their own entities, even conventionally.

In that case, because the reasoning which refutes inherent existence must refute that inherent existence even conventionally and because you assert that the reasoning which refutes inherent existence also refutes bondage, release, and so forth, and it is very clear that [in your system] bondage, release, and so forth are refuted even conventionally.

यः स्वितः त्री। ।

यः स्वितः स्वतः स्वतः

In brief, **if you assert that** an absence of inherent existence [on the one hand] **and** bondage, release, production, cessation, and so forth [on the other hand] **are contradictory**, then since the feasibility of all the presentations of cyclic existence and nirvāṇa with the emptiness which is an emptiness of inherent existence is unsuitable [to be posited] within either of the two truths, you have refuted the unique distinguishing feature of Madhyamika.

If you do not assert those two as contradictory, then you have no correct reason whatsoever for asserting that the reasoning refuting inherent existence refutes production, cessation, bondage, release, and so forth within [claiming] that it is not necessary to affix any qualification at all [such as "ultimately"] to the object of negation.

#### देश्वान्त्र-स्टाचलेन्द्र-त्यों मृत्यदे से मृत्याच्या सुर्वे त्या वर्षे मृत्या के स्टाचलेन्द्र से प्राप्त स्त्र स्था

Therefore, if the reasoning refuting inherent existence refutes cause and effect, then you are asserting that production, disintegration, and so forth, are **not** suitable within an absence of inherent existence.

#### 5 देन्ध्रन

10

15

20

25

वित्ताक्षेत्रप्रस्थात्व क्ष्रित्त्व । ।

विव्यव्यक्षात्र वित्त्व वित्त्व क्ष्रित्त्व वित्त्व क्ष्रित्त्व वित्त्व क्ष्रित्त्व वित्त्व क्ष्रित्त्व वित्त्व क्ष्रित्त्व वित्त्व वित्त्ति वित्त्व वित्त्व वित्त्व वित्त्व वित्त्व वित्त्ति वित्त्

### ଢ଼୕୶ଽୡ୕୕୩୶୲ଽ୕୕ଌ୲ୢଌୗୣ୕ଽଡ଼ଽ୕୷ଢ଼ୖ୲୰୲ୡ୶୲ୣଽ୕ଽ୶ୣୄଈୖୡୄୖଽ୕୵୰୲ଵ୕ୗ୕ୣ୵୰ଽଽୄ୲

In that case, it is very clear that [your position] does not differ in the slightest<sup>9</sup> from the objection by a Proponent of True Existence set forth in the twenty-fourth chapter [of Nāgārjuna's *Treatise on the Middle Way*, (XXIV.1)]:

If all these are empty,

There would be no arising and no disintegration;

It would follow that for you [Madhyamikas]

The noble truths would not exist.

म्याने द्रिकार्ये म्यान्य स्थान्त स्थित । वित्र म्याने स्थाने स्थाने स्थान

## बेबार्सेन् क्वेंबावबान्देंबार्येम् क्वायदेर्सेन्यायर्गेन्यान्दानुन्यम् केष्णम् क्वेन्यम् विवाह्यस्यायार्थेवार्वे।

Or from the objection by a Proponent of True Existence set forth in Nāgārjuna's *Refutation of Objections* (stanza 1):

If an inherent existence of all things

Does not exist in anything,

Then your words also are without inherent existence

And cannot refute inherent existence.

<sup>9</sup> does not differ in the slightest ব্রিদ্বাস্থ্য স্থান স্থা

# म्बाक्षां भेत्र प्रवास्त्र में क्ष्र प्रवास्त्र क्ष्र क्ष्र प्रवास्त्र क्ष्र क्ष्र प्रवास्त्र क्ष्र क्ष

You might think: "Production, disintegration, and so forth are not suitable within either an emptiness of inherent existence or a non-emptiness of inherent existence; since we do not assert either emptiness of inherent existence, we have no fault.

### देवे'मल्दामेंदेव'तुमाहन'शे'स्टाक्षे। वर्षेत्य'य'ळेंग'मकत्य'त्यका

This is not in the least suitable to be the meaning of the [Madhyamika] texts. For Chandrakīrti's *Clear Words* establishes:

Not only do we not have the fault that arising, disintegration, and so forth are not feasible, but also the four truths and so forth are feasible.

## ब्रेज्ञामञ्जूद्यायते:ब्रेज्ज्ञाम् इत्यायतःब्रेज्ज्ञो अर्झ्यायते:ब्रेज्ञ्चायाः देत्वा स्ट्याप्तः अर्थ्यायञ्चायाः व्रेज्ञामञ्जूद्यायते:ब्रेज्ज्ञाम् इत्यायते:ब्रेज्ज्ञाम् इत्यायते:ब्रेज्ञ्च्यायाः स्ट्रायाः स्ट्रायाः स्ट्राया

Also, Nāgārjuna's *Treatise on the Middle Way* speaks within differentiating well the suitability of those within a position of an emptiness of inherent existence and their unsuitability within a position of non-emptiness.

#### <u> ५८,४.५.५६४,५५५४,३५.१</u>

5

10

15

20

Further, Chandrakīrti's Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way" (VI.37-38ab) says:

It is not that empty things such as reflections that depend On a collection [of causes] are not renowned [to the world as falsities].

Just as here, from those empty reflections and so forth,

There are produced consciousnesses having their aspects [i.e., an eye consciousness seeing the reflection],

Similarly, even though all things are empty,

From those empty [things, effects] are thoroughly produced.

चान्नुतःष्यः त्यकेरन्नः मृत्यः स्वान्नः स्वान्नः त्यां वाच्यः त्यां वाचयः त्यां वाच्यः व्यः व्यः व्यः

Moreover, if reasoning refutes bondage, release, and so forth, then, since [according to your assertion] it is not suitable to refute [those] ultimately [i.e., affixing the qualification "ultimately" to the refutation], they must be asserted conventionally, and at that time, all the presentations of cyclic existence and nirvāṇa would be refuted even conventionally.

ने त्राचि प्रतासाम ने के क्षेत्र से न संविषा में ।

5

10

15

Such a Madhyamika is unprecedented.

#### [Chapter 7. Madhyamika Response]

#### ग्रुअप्य'ने'त्य'न्तु'अप्यश्यव हे'तूरप्रन्नप्य'वे।

[3/3] Third, How a Madhyamika responds to those [who refute the distinguishing feature of Madhyamika]

### इंदेशयाँ प्रदायत्वेत क्षेत्राक्षें दात त्वाक्षेत्र त्वत्वाक्षेत्र त्वत्वाक्षायत्वाक्षात्वत्वाक्षेत्र त्वा त्वि

To the objection, "If things were empty of inherent existence, the causes and effects of cyclic existence and nirvāna would not be possible,"

## अर्मेव'र्य'त्रा'क्क्षुय'वे'न्व'अ'यश्चर'त्य'तबर'कुते'र्क्कुव'र्र्कुव'र्द्धर'त्य'तबरश्चर्याय'णेव'यश'यर्क्कुव'वशक्किव'यर'यत्वेन'या'णेव'हे।

...the protector Nāgārjuna says that since the fault which was flung [to others] by the Madhyamikas has been flung at them, he, turning it around, will fling [back to the opponent] the fault [of the unsuitability of positing the causes and effects of cyclic existence and nirvāna].

10

15

20

25

The twenty-fourth chapter of the *Treatise on the Middle Way* [XXIV.15-16] says:

You turn your own faults
To us as faults
Like someone who, while riding a horse,
Forgets that very horse.

म्याने द्रिक्ष स्यास स्टार्य वित त्या । स्ट्रिक्ष स्वास स्ट्रिक्ष स्वास स्टार्य वित त्या । दे स्वास स्वास स्वास स्वास स्वास । स्वास स्वास स्वास स्वास । स्वास स्वास स्वास स्वास । स्वास स्वास स्वास स्वास ।

If you view things
As existing inherently,

In that case you view / All things as without causes and conditions.

Page 68 of 230

#### वेश:८८।

5

10

15

20

विद्वाराक्षेत्रविद्वार्थः स्ट्रीयः स्ट्रीयः ।

त्ववार्थः यदे प्रतिद्वार्थः यदेवः स्ट्रीयः यदेवः स्ट्रीयः स्ट्रीयः ।

विद्वारायः स्ट्रीयः यदेवः स्ट्रीयः स्ट्रीयः ।

विद्वारायः स्ट्रीयः स्ट्रीयः स्ट्रीयः ।

विद्वारायः स्ट्रीयः स्ट्रीयः स्ट्रीयः ।

### ন্বরার্র্যারাগ্রীরাশার্ত্ররার্র্যা

Also [XXIV.20]:

If all this is not empty,

There would be no arising and no disintegration;

It would follow that for you [Proponents of True Existence]

The four noble truths would not exist.

## देश्वात् स्टामी देश्वा मुदायदे स्टायबेत् सेट्वाम्बद्धा विषाणित् सेश्चाया विदेश मित्र सेश्वाय स्थापा स्टायबेत् सेट्या प्राया । सुम्मु सेट्यामित्र स्यामित्र स्वाया स्वाया स्वाया स्वया स

Therefore, it is clear that you who propound, "if there is no inherent existence, that is to say, establishment by way of [object's] own entities, then what else is there?" have unquestionably not differentiated the two, the absence of the inherent existence of a sprout and the non-existence of a sprout.

## *देवे*ॱछ्वेरश्चुःशुःर्लेद्र'घःददःश्चुःशुःस्टरगेःदेवेशश्चुदायःगकेशःगुदःशेःखेद्रायश

And, because of that, you have also not differentiated the two, the existence of a sprout and the establishment of a sprout by way of its own entity, ...

#### ॕॕॱज़ॱॸॸॱॺऀॱॸॕॱक़ॕॹॱऄ॔ॸॱय़ॱॸॸॱ। ॸॸॱॺऀॱॸॕॱक़ॕॹॹॣॻॱय़ॱऄॸॱक़ऄॸॱय़ॸॱढ़ॸॕॸॱय़ॸॱॺऻ**ॺ**ख़ॱॸॖ॓।

whereby it is clear you assert that whatever exists, exists by way of its own entity, and if something is not established by way of its own entity, it does not exist.

Otherwise, why would you propound that the reasoning refuting establishment by way of [an object's] own entity refutes mere existence, mere production and cessation, and so forth?

5

10

15

20

25

# ने देन होते ते स्वीत ते स्वीत स्वाधित स्वाधित

When you propound in this way that as long as sprouts and so forth are asserted to exist, they exist in the sense of being established by way of their own entities and propound that if [sprouts] are utterly without establishment by way of their own entities, they are utterly non-existent, you unquestionably fall to the two extremes.

### र्देश्यं रङ्क्षायिः में त्युग्राम् प्रमान्य प्रमान्य स्थाने स्थाने स्थाने स्थाने स्थाने स्थाने स्थाने स्थाने स

Therefore, your mode of understanding is no different from that of the Proponents of True Existence. For, Chandrakīrti's *Commentary on Āryadeva's "Four Hundred"* says clearly:

## <u>नर्देश्वर्यः र्षेन्यमञ्</u>युप्तते कृमन्त्रः श्चेन्रुन्देश्वर्यः नेते र्षेन्यकेन् योत्रः योत्रः श्चेन्रुन्य वीत्रः यो

According to the Proponents of True Existence, as long as there is an existence of things, there is also an intrinsic entity [of those things].

# मदमिः कें स्टमिः दें द्राञ्च प्रति कें दे त्याद्रे कार्य दे कार्य कार्य दे कार्य दे कार्य दे कार्य कार्य कार्य दे कार्य कार्य

When devoid of an intrinsic entity, then, for them, these things would be non-existent in all ways, like the horns of a donkey, whereby [these Proponents of True Existence] do not pass beyond propounding the two [extremes].

## বেইবি'মার্হর'ঘম'বেইব্'ঘ'রমঝ'ডব্'বেশ্রীশ্'বৃশ্বেম'বেশ্রুম'র্ই। । বিশ্বশাশব্দ'ব্যম'ববি'শ্রিম'র্ম।

Therefore, all of their manifest [i.e., explicit] assertions are difficult to fit together.

# सदरमित्रेश्वर्ष्य्यः स्वरः स

As long as you do not realize this differentiation by the glorious Chandrakīrti between the four ñinherent existence and existence [on the one hand] and absence of inherent existence and non-existence [on the other hand], you will unquestionably fall to the two extremes, whereby you will not realize the meaning of the middle free from the two extremes.

# त्त्रभः यत्त्रभः विक्रां श्रीतः विक्रां श्रीतः त्रां विक्रां श्रीतः त्रां विक्रां श्रीतः विक्रां विक्रां श्रीतः विक्रां विक्रां

For, when a phenomena comes to be utterly without establishment by way of its own entity, it will [for you] come to be utterly non-existent; in that case, since there is utterly no way to posit cause and effect within the empti[ness] which is an empti[ness] of inherent existence, you fall to an extreme of annihilation.

# षदःक्रॅब्राने र्षेत् प्यम् तर्देत् ख्रीत् कत् मदानी देश्येषा शुप्ता प्रशासका सुदान में ब्रायम त्या सुदान स्था सुदान स

Also, once a phenomena is asserted as existing, it must [for you] be asserted as established by way of its own entity; in that case, since there comes to be no way to take cause and effect as illusion-like, appearing to exist inherently whereas they do not, you fall to the extreme of permanence.

## 

Therefore, through realizing that all phenomena are, from the beginning, without even a particle that is established by way of its own entity, you do not fall to an extreme of existence.

## दे.क्षं.वयर.श्चें.श्ची.त्र.स्थान्ययः द्र्याच्याः स्थान्यः स्थान्यः स्थान्यः स्थान्यः स्थान्यः स्थान्यः स्थान्य त्यायश्चान्यः प्रमान्यः स्थान्यः प्रमान्यः स्थान्यः स्थान्यः स्थान्यः स्थान्यः स्थान्यः स्थान्यः स्थान्यः स्थान

And, when you induce an ascertaining consciousness which ascertains that even so [i.e., even though they lack inherent existence], things such as sprouts and so forth, without coming to be non-things empty of the capacity to perform functions, have the power to perform their own functions, you abandon the extreme of non-existence.

#### 

5

10

15

20

25

30

A clear differentiation between the absence of inherent existence and non-existence also is set forth in Chandrakīrti's *Clear Words*:

[A Proponent of True Existence] says: "if you posit in this way that things do not exist inherently, then through this you eliminate all those things stated by the Supramundane Victor [Buddha, such as], 'The fruition of actions done by oneself are experienced by oneself,' and you deprecate actions and [their] effects. Therefore you are the chief of Nihilists."

# यर्ह्न्यमः चुःश्ले। विः विः च्याः अन्ययः अन्यः विक्षः कुः विक्षः कुः विक्षः वि

Answer: "We are not Nihilists; having refuted the propounding of the two [extremes] of existence and non-existence, we illuminate the path free from those two that leads to the city of nirvāṇa.

### विं वें क्या वे त्यवाद्य वेदार्या द्यार्य द्याया व्यवस्था वा व्यवस्था वेदार्थ वेदार्थ वेदार्थ वेदार्थ विद्यार्थ विद्

We also do not propound, 'Actions, agents, effects, and so forth do not exist.'

#### र्देन्द्रः लेखा यदे द्या स्टायलेका से दर्दे लेखा द्वसाय स्टार्ट्या प्राधीन हो।

What do we propound? We posit, 'These do not inherently exist.'

## 

If you think, 'There is fault because performance of activity is not feasible within an absence of inherent existence,'

देःषदःषॅद्यःयःषेत्रःहै। स्दायवित्रःद्यःयङ्गायः इस्मार्थेः तः यः युः यः यः सर्वेदः यदेः ध्वेसः द्यः। स्दायवित्रः सेद्यः यः इस्मार्थेः तः यः यः यः वित्रः सेदः यः यः वित्रः सेदः यः सेदः यः वित्रः सेदः यः सेदः यः वित्रः सेदः यः सेदः यः वित्रः सेदः यः सेदः य

#### ন্বিষাশাস্ক্রমার্কী।

5

10

15

20

25

that [fault] also is not existent because activities are not seen among just those which have inherent existence and because activities are seen among just those without inherent existence.

## दे'त्यः स्टः चलेव'शेद्रः यः भेव'वः स्टः चलेव'त्वं म्'यः देश्चात्यश्चात्रश्चेव'त्वचुदः च'वश्चायः वश्चायः वश्चाय वे'स्टः चलेव'त्वं म्'यते' सेम्बायश्चात्वात्वात्यम् म्यायश्चात्वात्यः वर्षेद्रः चलेव'त्वेव'त्वं स्वायः वश्चायः व

The proposition by Proponents of True Existence is that there is no inherent existence, that refutation of inherent existence eliminates the arising of fruitions from actions does not differ in assertion from the assertion [by Tibetans claiming to be Madhyamikas] that the reasoning refuting inherent existence refutes cause and effect.

#### ক্স'বের্ঝ'নশ্বান্তর্'য়্র'নবি'লার্র্র'র্ন্রম'বেক্সুম'র্ম'র্ন্ত্র্রম'ন'র্ন্ত্রম'ন'ব্র'ম'রম্বর্মান্তর্ম

Both the Madhyamikas and the Proponents of True Existence are alike in asserting that if cause and effect are refuted, one becomes the chief of those having a view of annihilation.

However, the Madhyamikans do not assert that cause and effect are refuted. Nevertheless, the Proponents of True Existence, thinking that if one refutes inherent existence, one must also definitely refute cause and effect, call the Madhyamikas "Nihilists", or "Annihilationists".

#### र्वित् ग्रीः त्वाः सायमः विश्वः व याद्वस्रश्चार्त्तः सायमः विश्वः व याद्वस्रश्चार्त्तः सायमः विश्वः व

Most of the Tibetans claiming to be Madhyamikas appear to accord with the Proponents of True Existence in asserting that if one refuses inherent existence, the reasoning must also refute cause and effect; ...

## 10 देंत्र'गुट:कुःदव्रकार्रम्बायकादर्गेषा'य'द्वुःसदेःखुम्बाकुःबुकात्रकारेःखार्सेकायरःब्रूटःहा ।

5

20

25

...however, [those Tibetans,] taking this reasoned refutation of cause and effect to be the Madhyamika system, appear to admire it.

# र्द्धेन्'यानेदे'यव,र्निर्वेचं क्रमाने अन्यायायायायीन है। व्यन्योन् मिन्सान्त्र न्याने स्थायन स्थायन

In answer to the objection [raised by the Proponents of True Existence in the above passage, Chandrakīrti responds, in paraphrase]: "We [Madhyamikas] are not Nihilists; avoiding the two [extremes] of existence and non-existence, we illuminate the path to liberation." The remainder [of the passage] indicates how [Madhyamikas] avoid propounding [the extremes] of existence and non-existence.

# दे'त्यार्वे'र्चे'ङगादी'त्यसार्व्यसार्केग्नसासेदार्दे'त्वेसासीक्षुं'वेसायसादी'सेद्'यमाञ्चायासीक्ष्यायसादी'। त्यसार्व्यसादेवासीक्ष्यायसादी'सेद्'दे'देस'यर्द्।

About that, through saying, "We do not propound that actions, effects, and so forth are non-existent," propounding [the extreme of] non-existence is avoided ñ whereas we would be Nihilists if we asserted cause, effect, and so forth to be non-existent, we do not assert such.

To the question, "Well then what do you propound?", [Chandrakīrti says, "We posit, or assert, that these  $\tilde{n}$  actions, effects, and so forth  $\tilde{n}$  are without inherent existence. Through this he avoids propounding [an extreme of] existence.

[The statement], "Since performance of activity is not feasible within an absence of inherent existence, the fault remains as before," indicates the objection by the Proponents of True Existence ñ "Even though you [Madhyamikas] say, 'We do not propound non-existence; we propound an absence of inherent existence,' you still cannot abandon the fault stated earlier that if there is no inherent existence, cause and effect are not feasible."

They object thus since in their system there is no difference between the two ñ an absence of inherent existence and non-existence.

देवे त्यत्र त्र्क्षुत्र त्य्यत् स्वात् प्रक्षेत्र त्या स्वात्र त्या क्षेत्र त्या स्वात् स्यात् स्वात् स्वा

In answer to that, [Chandrakīrti] says that activities such as causes' producing effects and so forth are unsuitable within inherent existence and those are suitable within only an absence of inherent existence.

## ସଜ୍ଞିସ୍କୁ'ସଝି'ୡ୕ଵୗୢଊ'ସ'ଊୣଷ'ଶୃକ୍ୟ'

5

10

15

20

Chandrakīrti's Commentary on (Āryadeva's) "Four Hundred" says:

यन्यान्ते न्द्रं शर्ये सेन्यमञ्जूष्य साधीत नि। हेत्र केन्य द्वेत्ययम त्वुन्य ज्ञूष्य धीत प्रते द्वीम में।

We do not propound things as non-existent because we propound dependent-arising.

के हिंद्र दर्भ र्ये र श्चाय लेगा माया लेवा या धीव हो। हेव के र प्रवेश यम प्रवृत्य श्चाय धीव या हेद ही हिंदर हो।

If you ask, "Are you a Proponent of Things [that is, of truly existent things]?", we are not because of just being proponents of dependent-arising.

हिंद्रिक्ष्यायाविषाकेषा हेवकियावसारह्यूयाविषा

If you ask, "What do you propound?", we propound dependent-arising.

If you ask, "What is the meaning of dependent-arising?", it has the meaning of non-inherent production, it has the meaning of arising effects whose nature is similar to a magician's illusion, mirages, reflections, cities of scent-eaters, emanations, and dreams, and it has a meaning of emptiness and selflessness.

# ଵୖ୶୲ୖୄଽ୶୵ୡୖୢଌ୴ୄୄ୕ଽ୵ୡ୕ୣ୵୕୳୶୲ୣ୵୕ଽ୶୲ୖ୕୰୴୕ୣ୵ୠୣ୵ୄ୕ୢୄୠ୷ୠୡ୕୷ୠ୕୶୲ୡୢୢୄ୕ୢ୶୷୷ୡ୕ୄଊ୳୴ୄୡୡୄ୕୵ୄ୕୲

5

10

15

Thus [Chandrakīrti] indicates how, through asserting [things] as dependent-arisings, the propounding of the two extremes of the existence and non-existence of things is avoided.

# दे.लट्डेब.एडेज.वी...की.ट्रेब.ट्र.च.डेब.की.बी.बा.बा.बी.व्ह.च.बा.बी.ट्रेब.ट्र.बा.च्र.च.डेब.ट्र.बी.वा.ब

Moreover, through explaining that the meaning of dependent-arising is no inherently existent production he avoids propounding things as existent [i.e., as inherently existent], and through indicating the arising of effects that are like a magician's illusions and so forth as the meaning of dependent-arising, he avoids propounding things as non-existent [that is, devoid of all capacity to perform functions].

## 

Therefore, "thing" can be taken as "inherent existence" or can be taken as "the capacity to perform a function'.

#### 

From among these two, "thing" in "propounding things as existent" refers to only inherent establishment, and "thing" in "propound things as non-existent" refers to things which perform functions.

# दे'गिवेश'शेख'य'व'रू'र्यवेत'यगग'उँद'श्चु'स'कृ'त्वे कु'त्व्रश'र्षेद्'यर'यश्च्रत'र्ये द्वेर'र्दे ।

For, when [Chandrakīrti] avoids those two [extremes, i.e., propounding things as existent or as non-existent] he refutes inherent existence and indicates that causes and effects which are like a magician's illusions exist.

### ग्वत्यप्रायवि'यमु'यदे'दश्वेयायायश्रा

5

10

15

20

25

Moreover, Chandrakīrti's Commentary on (Āryadeva's) "Four Hundred" says:

# षद [598] के विद्यापते खुव का की द्वापा के दार्च की देन के बिका देन की सु

If someone asks, "Do you [Madhyamikas propound] that a memory consciousness having a past thing as its object does not exist?", [we Madhyamikas answer:] who would propound that such does not exist?

# विं वें उगाने हेन उदाय वाय र त्वुर वा ने वाय ना ना विं वें।

We [Madhyamikas] do not eliminate depending-arising.

## देन्द्रेन्द्रमः व्यादिन्द्रमञ्जू

The way in which it exists was posited by the master [Āryadeva's] himself [XI.25bcd]:

"देशवा <sup>।</sup>

द्वरयः बेद्यान्तुः व्यवायाधी।

र्देव'य'र्वेग'य'र्वि'व'द्युद्र'।

# बेशः र्र्भेयः द्वेंदः वेदः द्वायमः वर्देषः यमः अदंदः दे।

Therefore, the "memory" which arises is only an unreal [subject] Having an object which is unreal.

# 

Therefore, the object of observation of a remembering consciousness is a past thing.

याया है। प्रस्ति के स्वाप्त के

If [the past thing] did exist by way of its own entity, then because the memory of it would be observing an object that [inherently] exists, [that memory] would be established by way of its own entity. But, when the past thing [is shown to be] without inherent existence, then the remembering consciousness observing it also is without inherent existence. Therefore, [Āryadeva's] has established that [the past object and the remembering consciousness] are unreal.

Page 76 of 230

"Unreal" does not mean something other than "without inherent existence" and "dependent-arising"; the non-existence of things [which perform functions] is not the meaning of "unreal".

# यन्त्रायते न्द्र्यायं द्वयाया वयत्रा उन् न्त्राया देवाया विषय स्त्राया विषय स्त्राय स

A past thing is not non-existent in all ways because of being an object of memory and because effects of it are seen.

It also does not exist by way of its own entity because it would [absurdly] follow that it was permanent and because it would [absurdly] follow that it would be actually apprehended [i.e., the remembering consciousness would actually contact the past object].

# खेशत्त्रायात्यार्श्वेषाश्चायात्ते प्राण्याये द्वार्था सेत्राया स्त्राया स्त्राया स्त्राया स्त्राया स्त्राया स् खेशप्त्राया स्त्रायात्यार्थे प्राण्याया स्त्राया स्त्राया स्त्राया स्त्राया स्त्राया स्त्राया स्त्राया स्त्राय

Hence [Chandrakīrti] says that these past objects and so forth are not utterly non-existent and are also not established by way of their own entities and that the meaning of unreal or false is the meaning of dependent-arising and does not mean that things are non-existent.

# र्केश्वादिन्द्रम्म् स्टामी देश्वास्य स्टिन्द्र प्रति स्वादि सङ्घायत्म स्वादि स

Therefore, if you assert these phenomena to be established by way of their own entities, you are propounding things [i.e., inherent existence], or fall to an extreme of [inherent] existence; however, propounding these as merely existent is not a propounding of things [i.e., inherent existence], or a propounding of [inherent] existence.

# देन्त्रत्यां वित्तात् वित्तत् वित्तात् वित्तात् वित्तात् वित्तत् वित्तत् वित्तत् वित्तत् वित

Similarly, if you assert that internal and external things are non-things, empty of the capacity to perform functions, you are propounding the non-existence of things, or fall to an extreme of [utter] non-existence; ...

# दे'द्रमायास्याविकासेद्यस्य स्थ्रूष्यायस्य सेद्रास्य स्थ्रूरायासेकार्वे।

5

10

25

30

however, through propounding them as without inherent existence, you do not fall to an extreme of [utter] non-existence.

10

15

# देःक्ष्रस्योशेद्रपाद्रस्यत्वेत्रसेद्रपाद्रस्यत्वेत्रसेद्रपाद्रपाद्रस्य व्याप्त्रप्येद्रपाद्यस्य विद्रपाद्यस्य विद्यस्य विद्रपाद्यस्य विद्यस्य विद्य

When, not differentiating in this way utter non-existence, no inherent existence, establishment by way of [an object's] own entity, and mere existence, you [try to] prevent falling to the extremes of existence and non-existence through putting hope in just propounding, "We do not propound [such and such] as non-existent, we say it is not existent."

र्षेत्रयम्भ्रेश्च्याः भ्रेत्रयाः अप्येत्रः वेद्याः चेत्रः चेद्याः व्याः व्याः व्याः व्याः व्याः व्याः व्याः व्य चत्राम् अर्थे वित्रः विवास्य व

"We do not propound [such and such] as existent, we say it is not non-existent," you are propounding only a collection of contradictions and do not set forth even slightly the meaning of the middle way.

माल्यायार्यात्रम्यायाः चेत्रायते क्षेत्रः स्टायत्वेयार्षेत्र क्षेत्रः माल्यायाः स्वायायार्थः यहमायाः च्यायाः स्व

For, when you [who claim to be Madhyamikas] refute others, since you engage in refutation within having investigated the two [possibilities] of inherent existence, no inherent existence, and so forth, you yourself assert that the possibilities must be limited to two, and yet you assert a meaning that is neither of those two.

यदिःस्मान्त्रीत्रात्यान्त्रत्यात्वेषात्यात्रत्यात्वेष्ण्यात्र्यात्रेष्णात्रेष्ण्यात्रेष्णेष्णात्रेष्ण्यात्रेष्णेष्णात्रेष्णेष्णात्रेष्य

This is as follows: since you are investigating with respect to some base [i.e., any phenomenon] whether it exists inherently or not, you must assert that the possibilities are limited to those two;

20 देरः अप्यत्र्यप्रते खुरः माश्रुअप्पेन् वर्षेन् यान्य विवर्णेन् यान्य योन् यान्य विवर्णेव विवर्णेन्य यान्य योन् यान्य योन्य योन् योन्य योज्य य

...if there were a third possibility not included in those [two], it would not be reasonable to investigate, "Which of these two, inherently existent or not inherently existent, is it?"

न्येरत्। वर्नेषाःकुर्वेन्तर्श्रेवर्येरव्वेन्नर्भेन्यंत्रर्भेनर्येरव्वेन्यंत्रर्भेन्यंत्रर्भेन्यंत्र

For example, it would be like asking when something exists as a color, "Is it blue or is it yellow?"

25 देःश्वर स्टायबित व्याप्त स्थेद वाहिका क्षु वाहिंद केंद्र प्याय हो।

Also, being limited in this way to the two, inherent existence and no inherent existence, depends upon in general being limited to the two, existence and non-existence, with regard to objects of knowledge.

# न्ये सन् वन्त्रायायायन्त्रायदेः मञ्ज्ञाप्तरानुः सदि। यार्क्षेत्रार्क्षेत्रार्क्षेत्रार्क्षेत्रायायाः स्वित्रार्वे । ।

This is like the way in which, for example, being limited to truly existent one or truly existent many with respect to true existence depends upon being limited in general to the two, one or many.

## ५ दे सूर्यायर्केंबरकेंद्र व वे सुर्यासुसर्येषा द्वीसायसादे यावेसायार स्वाराय स्वीत यदि केंसादर्द्र या वे ययर्के सावेस

When there is such limitation, this must eliminate any third possibility, hence, asserting a phenomenon that is neither of those two is senseless babble.

### र्रें ५ ह्वेंग यश

10

15

25

रदःचलेवःकेदःदःकेदःर्यमात्र। ।

वेशमञ्जूदशयदेः धुरः र्रे।

For, Nāgārjuna's Refutation of Objections (26cd) says:

If no inherent existence were overturned, Inherently existence would be thoroughly established.

# 

Moreover, those who assert such, since they have no way to make a definite enumeration that eliminates any third possibility, can only be doubtful. For eliminating one possibility such as "exists" or "does not exist" would not positively include [or affirm] the other possibility.

# 20 धैन्द्राभेन्याः अंग्रामायायम् विष्यास्य महास्यास्य स्थान्य स्थान्य

If you assert that with respect to some things such as "is", "is not" and so forth there is no third possibility, it is utterly the same also with respect to "exists" and "does not exist".

Since it appears such is asserted due to mistaking the mere words of Madhyamika texts that say, "is not existent", "is not non-existent", then just as [according to you] it is unsuitable to propound "exists" or "does not exist", so also it would be unreasonable to propound, "is not existent", "is not non-existent" because such is said with respect to all four possibilities.

#### देशवः इःशेः श्रश

5

10

15

20

Therefore, Nāgārjuna's Treatise on the Middle Way (XV.10) says:

स्तिः देशः वुः यः ह्रणः यसः यहेत। । सेतः देशः वुः यः क्षतः यसः स्त्राः । ते स्वीरः स्ति त्रोतः यो देशः यो त्याः । सामसः यसः यावसः यसः स्ति ।

Saying "exists" is a conception of permanence; Saying "does not exist" is a view of annihilation. Hence the wise should not dwell In either existence of non-existence.

त्र्युम्यम्याम्यस्याप्यम्यम् अद्भात्यः भ्रोत् । द्रेश्चार्यः इस्थायः इस्थायः स्वान्यस्य । व्यक्तान्यस्य । व्यक् विश्वान्यस्य विश्वान्यस्य विश्वान्यस्य । विश्वान्यस्य । विश्वान्यस्य । विश्वान्यस्य विश्वान्यस्य । विश्वान्यस्य

Even this statement is not said with respect to mere existence and non-existence; rather it is said clearly that asserting things as inherently established comes to be a view of permanence and annihilation.

॔ ॐगॱग्रष्यःप्यषा ग्रवृदःश्र्यंयदेःर्धेदःयेदःदुःदिदःयःदद्याःर्यःर्धेदःयेदःर्यःयः

Chandrakīrti's *Clear Words*, after explaining that the conceptions of existence and non-existence [spoken of] in the earlier text [i.e., in the passage from Nāgārjuna's *Treatise on the Middle Way* just cited] refer to the views of inherent existence and inherent non-existence, says:

षदःदेतेःब्री-र-१५४।चॅ र्दर-१५४।चॅ से दाय-१५४ वः प्रें प्रम् वाय-१५४ वर्ष प्रम् वर्षः वर्षः वर्षः वर्षः वर्षः व

Why is it that when one has views of things and non-things [or inherent existence and inherent non-existence,] it follows that one has views of permanence and of annihilation?

न्तः विषा स्टाय विषाणी कार्ये । देवे : ब्रेट्स : स्टाय स्टाय । क्रेंब : ब्रुट्स : स्टाय स्टाय स्टाय ।

Whatever exist inherently is permanent Since it does not become non-existent.

If one says that what arose formerly [as inherently existent] is now non-existent,

Through that [as extreme of] annihilation is entailed.

25

# गदःविगः स्टायविदःश्चेश्वः व्यादः स्टायदे द्वः स्टायविदः यार्थेवः यार्थेवः यार्थेवः स्टायविदः यार्थेवः स्टाय

Since the inherently existent is not overcome, something that is said to be inherently existent does not ever become non-existent;

# <u>दे.के.युष्टः रटः यधुष्टः सूर्यः भुटः दीषश्चाय्यस्य त्याः स्यात्रः की यरः स्वात्रः राजीः स्वीतः स्वी</u>

...in that case it follows that through asserting [something] as just inherently existent, one has a view of permanence.

# क्र्यायम्भ्रायम्भ्रायम् अप्तर्भात्रम् । क्रम्यमाक्ष्यायमान्त्रम् ।

Also, through asserting as inherent existence of thing when formerly there were abiding and then asserting that now, later, they are destroyed whereby they do not exist, it follows that one has a view of annihilation.

# बेबार्स्य विव चुंबार्षेत्रयाष्ट्रवास्य सुद्धायायास्य स्वाः स्वाः स्वाः स्वाः स्वाः स्वाः स्वाः स्वाः स्वाः स्व

Thus [Chandrakīrti] calls the assertion of inherent existence a view of permanence and says that if one asserts the later destruction of what was formerly inherently existent, such is a view of nihilism.

## ર્ષેન્ ત્રાસ્ત્રાન્દ્ર તેવા વાસ્ત્રાયા ત્રાસાસા સ્ત્રાસા [

5

10

15

20

He does not call mere existence and mere disintegration [views of permanence and annihilation].

# 

Also the *Buddhapālita Commentary on (Nāgārjuna's) Treatise on the Middle Way")* clearly explains that [XV.11]:

Whatever exists inherently [is permanent

Since it does not become non-existent.

If one says that what arose formerly (as inherently existent) is now non-existent,

Through that (an extreme of ) annihilation is entailed.]

indicates the type of permanence and annihilation [intended when XV.10, cited above] explains that saying "exists" and saying "non-exists" are views of permanence and annihilation.

# यार्च प्रदायत्त्र स्वाप्त स्वापत स्वाप्त स्व

In brief, if you propound that the emptiness which is the absence of inherent existence is not the excellent emptiness and refute it, due to abandoning the doctrine, that is, abandoning the Perfection of Wisdom, you will go to a bad migration.

Further, even if you have interest in the absence of inherent existence, but thinking, "If there is no inherent existence, what is there?", assert that all phenomena do not exist at all, you will still fall into that chasm of a view of annihilation.

#### ने स्ट्रम्पर।

5

10

15

20

In this way also [Nāgārjuna's Treatise on the Middle Way, XXIV.11ab] says:

If they wrongly view emptiness, Those of small wisdom will be ruined.

### बेबायदे'दशेयायार्क्षग्माबयायबा

As commentary on this, Chandrakīrti's Clear Words says:

If, on the one hand, one were to think, "All [phenomena] are empty, that is, all do not exist," at that time one would be viewing [emptiness] wrongly.

# **दे:**श्चरःतु।

केंब्र'यदे'र्स्य प्यम्यस्य स्य स्था । भ्रोत्यायश्च स्य स्था ते स्तु दृः गुप्तः यहं या । स्दे 'सूम्य से द्यमः सूष्य स्था । भ्रोत्या संस्था ।

#### लेशप्यन्दःर्दे।।

5

10

15

20

In this vein [Nāgārjuna's Precious Garland] 10 (stanza 119) says:

This doctrine wrongly understood Causes the unwise<sup>11</sup> to be ruined Because they sink into the filth Of nihilistic views.

ङे ब्रेष्यः वस्त्राच्यात्रे त्या ब्रुप्यः यदेवश्वयः श्रेष्ट्रं वस्त्रे देश्वे हिः व्रुप्यः देश्वयः यदे देश्वयः विद्यात्रे देश्ययः विद्यात्रे देश्वयः विद्यात्रे देश्यात्रे देश्वयः विद्यात्रे देश्वयः विद्यात्यः विद्यात्रे देश्वयः विद्यात्रे देश्वयः विद्यात्रे देश्वयः विद्यात्रे देश्वयः विद्यात्रे देश्वयः विद्यात्रे देश्वयः विद्यात्रे द

On the other hand, if you do not assert a deprecation of all [phenomena, but] as the same time say, "How could these things, having been observed, be just empty? Therefore, the meaning of an absence of inherent existence is not the meaning of emptiness," you have definitely abandoned emptiness.

# नेॱढ़ॗॸॱॿॖॖॸॹॱढ़ॹॱक़ॕॹॱॻॖऀॹॱख़॔ॸॹॱय़ॸॱढ़ॻॗॸॱय़ढ़ऀॱय़ॹॱॻॖऀॹॱॸ॓ॹॱय़ॸॱॸढ़ॱज़ॎॿॕॖॸॱढ़ॺॕॖॱय़ॸॱढ़ॻॗॸॱॸ॓॔ॎऻॗ

Having abandoned [emptiness] in this way, you will definitely go to a bad transmigration due to the action of having become bereft of dharma.

-

Hopkins translation.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>11</sup> Those who accept emptiness but take it to mean nothingness thereby turn away from the practice of virtue and overcoming of non-virtuous activities.

In this vein [Nāgārjuna's Precious Garland] 12 (stanza 120) says:

Further, the stupid who fancy Themselves wise, <sup>13</sup> having a nature Ruined by rejecting [emptiness] go headfirst To a terrible hell from their wrong understanding.

শ্বাথান্ট

5

10

15

20

25

Some persons might think:

বিঁ বিঁ ওলা দ্বিঁ ঝার্মি রুমঝান্থু মানঝান্ত্রদঝান্ব ঝান্ত্রীঝাঝাদ্র ঘেমাঞ্চান্ত ঝার্মি বিশ্বি ওলা বিশ্বি আনু ব দ্বার্মি দ্বার্মি দ্বার্মি ক্রিলা ক্রদ্বার্মি কর্মি ক্রিমি ক্রিমি ক্রিমি কর্মি কর্মি ক্রিমি ক্রিম

If we, having asserted things formerly, later viewed them as non-existent, we would have a view of annihilation. However, since we from the very beginning do not assert them as existing, what is annihilated [so that] there would come to be a view of annihilation?

देशव.कर.तम.चल.चम.प्रश्नी । कूच.वैस.र.केम.श्रर.कुश.ता ।

बेशन्।यन्यायाळन्यूयम्यास्यस्य

Nāgārjuna's Treatise on the Middle Way, XV.11cd], says:

If one says that what arose formerly [as inherently existent] is now non-existent, Through that [as extreme of] annihilation is entailed.

Thus [Nāgārjuna] says that such is a view of annihilation.

-

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>12</sup> Hopkins translation.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>13</sup> These are those who take emptiness to mean a denial of cause and effect and therefore reject emptiness.

#### क्र्या.याश्चल.जश्च.यीट.।

Also, Chandrakīrti's Clear Words say:

इत्यत्वें रायात्त्राह्में यात्ती यादी वाया की निष्ठाया की साया की साम स्थान है साम स्थान है से स्थान स्थान है से स्थान स्थान है से स्थान स्थान है से स्थान स्थान

Yogis, who, having realized conventional truths ñ which are produced only by ignorance ñ as without inherent existence, then realize that the emptiness of those has the character of the ultimate do not fall to the two extremes.

न्द्रीम्बायबाद्वीबाग्यन्त्रोत्।यन्त्रीक्षःत्राक्षेत्रःत्रीक्षःत्राक्षेत्रःत्रीम्बायबाद्वीबाग्यन्त्राक्षेत्रःत्र विवादान्त्रीयान्त्रः स्वीदायन्त्रीक्षः स्वाद्याद्वीत् स्वीदायम्बाद्याः

## 

5

10

15

20

25

Thinking, "When a certain thing [such as a seed] becomes non-existent [upon disintegrating] now [at the time of the sprout], then at the time [of the seed], what would have [inherently] existed?", since they do not observe an inherent existence of things formerly, they do not realize them later as non-existent.

देन्द्रे-देन्यश्चायाः स्त्रेन्त्रे । कर्न्यायाः निष्ठात् स्त्रेन्याः स्त्रेन्याः स्त्रेन्याः स्त्रेन्याः स्त्र द्रायश्चायद्यश्चर्यम् स्त्रेन्याः स्त्रेन्यः स्त्रे

[Answer:] This [argument] is not reasonable because if, in order to have a view of annihilation, it were necessary to have asserted formerly whatever thing was annihilated, then it would absurdly follow that even the worldly Materialists would not have a view of annihilation since they do not propound former and future lives, actions and their effects and so forth, as later non-existent having asserted them formerly, but rather do not assert them as existing from the very start.

नेशवा

देशवुराद्वास्त्रमात्रोदाकेशाय। । देशवाकुरादासमात्रमायमायम्

#### बेशगशुदशपादी।

Therefore, [Nāgārjuna's] statement,

If one says that what arose formerly [as inherently existent] is now non-existent, through that [an extreme of] annihilation is entailed, [XV.11cd]

10

15

## 

means that Proponents of True Existence who assert that things have inherent existence, that it, are established by way of their own entities, unquestionably come to have views of permanence or annihilation.

For, if they assert that that [which has] inherent existence does not change at any time, they come to have a view of permanence, and if they assert that what existed [inherently] at a former time is later destroyed, they come to have a view of annihilation.

Therefore, when indicating that [the Madhyamikas] do not have a view of annihilation in which an inherent existence that existed at a former time is held to be destroyed at a later time, their [the Madhyamikas'] nonassertion of even a particle of inherent existence, that is, establishment by way of their own entities, in things serves as the reason [for this].

### 

All views of annihilation are not abandoned through this [assertion].

Another mode of [Mādhyamikas'] difference from those having a view of annihilation, who assert that actions and their effects do not exist, is set forth extensively in Chandrakīrti's *Clear Words* as follows:<sup>14</sup>

# 20 दिन्द्वास्त्र विश्वास्त्र विश्वास्त्र

Those having a view of annihilation assert that actions and their effects as well as other lifetimes do not exist, whereas Madhyamikas assert those as without inherent existence; hence there is a difference in their theses.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>14</sup> [DA and E note 406:] The remainder of the chapter is no longer primarily concerned with rejecting the position of those Madhyamika interpreters who negate too much, but instead lays out directly the ways in which the true Madhyamikas — i.e., Chandrakīrti and Buddhapalita — defend themselves from the charges that Madhyamikas are no different from Nihilists.

# ५ स्यायान्त्री त्यस्य त्यस्य स्थापित प्राप्त स्थापित प्राप्त स्थापित स्थापित

Madhyamikas propound that actions and their effects and so forth are without inherent existence by reason of their being dependent-arisings; Annihilationists, since they do not assert that actions and their effects and so forth are dependent-arising, do not take this as their reason; rather, ...

त्रुयः चुः त्रेय्यक्षात्रवः त्रदेः त्रहेषाः हेवः श्रः याव्यात्यवा । भ्राप्तयाः चुः याव्यत्यः त्रवः त्रदेः त्रहेषाः हेवः श्रः याव्यात्यवा ।

...they propound [actions and their effects] as non-existent having taken as their reason the fact that a present sentient being is not seen to come to this like from a former one and to go from this to a future one. Hence there is a great difference [also] in their reasons. Chandrakīrti's *Clear Words* says:

यदीराव देवा द्वासाय वे से दाया प्राव्य दा स्वर हो।

5

10

15

20

25

Some say that Madhyamikas do not differ from Nihilists.

यान्यी श्ची स्वाप्त स

Why? Because [Madhyamikas] propound that virtuous and non-virtuous actions, agents, effects, and all worlds [i.e., former and later lives] are empty of inherent existence and Nihilists also propound those as non-existent. Hence they argue that Madhyamikas do not differ from Nihilists.

Such is not the case, for Madhyamikas propound dependent-arising and propound that everything ñ this world, other worlds, and so forth ñ because of being dependent-arisings are without inherent existence.

Nihilists do not realize other worlds [lifetimes] and so forth as non-things [that is, without inherent existence] by way of their emptiness of inherent existence due to being dependent-arisings.

### र्दें व डि खे व

What do they [propound]?

दिना हेत्र तिरेति दिसार्यते द्वापा स्टायलेत श्री साद्या स्वाप स्य

### ন্বিষাশাস্ক্রদ্রমার্ক্তা

5

15

20

25

They, observing as inherently existent the aspects of the things in this world and not seeing them come to this world from another world and go from this world to another, deprecate those other things [former and future lives] which [in fact] are like the things observed in this world.

Someone [else] might think: Even though the reasons cited by the two, Madhyamikas and Annihilationists, are not the same, nonetheless, because they are similar in realizing that actions and their effects and former and future worlds are without inherent existence, that is, establishment by way of their own entities, their views of an absence of inherent existence are the same.

# वर्ने व्यद्धी वर्ने हो।

Even with respect to this they differ.

## विंधिका महामित्रे के ता के

For, since [Nihilists] assert non-inherent existence to be utterly non-existent, they do not assert [actions and their effects and former and future lifetimes] as either of the two truths;

## <u> २त्यायश्राक्षेत्रश्राद्यश्राक्ष्याश्राक्ष्यात्राक्ष्यात्राक्ष्यात्राक्ष्यात्राक्ष्यात्राक्ष्यात्राक्ष्यात्र</u>

however, Madhyamikas conventionally assert those ñ actions and their effects and so forth ñ as existing. Chandrakīrti's *Clear Words* says:

मायाके ने भुष्वत्राह (604) ने न्यामी अपन्देश र्यते प्रत्यामी र्रे र्यो स्वित्या सामित्र प्राप्त स्वित्या स्वत्या स्वित्या स्वित्या स्वित्या स्वित्या स्वित्या स्वत्या स्वत्

Should someone say: "Even so, they are similar in one way, in terms of the view, because [Nihilists] realize the non-existence of an intrinsic entity of things as non-existent."

# यं के दि। द्वायाया द्वा वीश्वात्व हिंदा हुर्वेद प्यात्व व्यात्व विश्व प्यात्व विश्व प्रात्व विश्व विश

### ন্বিষাশাস্ক্রমার্ম্য

5

10

15

25

This is not so. Because Madhyamikas assert [those] as existing conventionally and these [Nihilists] do not assert them at all, they are just not similar.

# देशक्षेत्रमुक्ष्र्वेत्रमुष्यद्रायश्चारव्यश्चर्यावश्चायश्चायश्चायश्चायश्चर्यः । विवादिक्षायः विवादिक्षायः विवादिक्षायः । विवादिक्षायः विवादिक्षायः विवादिक्षायः विवादिक्षायः विवादिक्षायः विवाद

This indicates that those claiming to be Madhyamikas who do not assert actions, effects, and so forth even conventionally are similar in view to the Worldly Materialists.

# ૡઽ૽ૺૠૼૹૣ૽ૼૼૼૼૼૼૺૺૼ૱૽૿ૢ૽ૺૹ૽૽ૹૼૢૼૡૢ૾૽૽ૻૢ૽૽ૼઽૣૻ૽ઌૺ૾૽ૢ૽ૢૼૢૹૹૼ૱ૢૼ૽૽ૺઌ૽ૡૹ૽ઌ૽૽૱ૡ૽ૼૢઌ૽ૺૣ૽ૼઌ૽ૹ૽ૺૢૡૹ૽ૡ૽૾ૹ૽૽૽ૢ૽ૺઌૹ૽૽૱ઌ૽ૻ

Here the master [Chandrakīrti], as the reason for [Madhyamikas] being different from those having a view of annihilation did not say [as you who negate too much would], "Because they have assertions, whereas we do not."

He also did not say, "They assert those as non-existent whereas we do not propound them as non-existent but rather assert them as not existent. Instead, he spoke of [Madhyamikas'] propounding [actions, effects, and so forth] as without inherent existence, of their stating dependent-arising as the reason for that, and of their conventionally asserting those presentations as existent.

# 20 ग्रायाक्ते प्रायाः प्रत्याः विकास्याः प्रत्याः विकास्याः प्रत्याः विकासे विकासे

Someone might think: "That actions, their effects, and so forth are without inherent existence, that is, establishment from their own entities, is correct [from your viewpoint], and since when those having a view of annihilation also assert them as non-existent, they assert then as without inherent existence, therefore from the viewpoint of [asserting] an absence of inherent existence they are similar to Madhyamikas."

# वर्ने यदः क्रेश्रः वित्रः हु।

[Answer:] With respect to this also, there is a very great difference.

# २येरःत्। र्देरःयम्बायदेःश्चेलेषाःयःष्ठिषाःषेकाते देवायम्बायरःश्चेत्वेषायते द्वात् स्वात्वेषायम् वार्षः वेषायम्

For example, with respect to a person who stole some jewels, one person, whereas he does not [in fact] know that a certain [person] committed the robbery, says by way of speaking falsely, "That person committed the robbery."

#### 

Another person, having seen that thief steal the jewels says, "That person committed the robbery." In this case, indeed, in just the way that both of them said, "That person committed the robbery," that thief did steal.

# 10 ग्रेनि'ने'न्स्तु'श्चु'त्य'र्डेन'र्नेश्च'ने'नेनेन'यन'श्चु'नश'शे'श्चर्द्धनश'य'निनेन'र्ने। |ने'यन'र्केन'नश्चर्यायश्च

However, since one person spoke falsely and the other spoke truly, they are not alike. In this vein, Chandrakīrti's *Clear Words* says:

### गाय हे दर्देश में अर्द्ध्दश सें ले वा

15

20

25

Someone might say that they [Madhyamikas and Nihilists] are the same in fact.

# য়ঀ৽ঢ়৾৽ড়ৼ৽ঀ৾ৼয়৽য়৾৽য়৽য়ৣয়৽য়ৼ৾য়৻৻ৼয়৽য়৽ঀ৾৽ড়৽ড়৾য়৽য়৽য়ৼঢ়৾য়য়য়৽য়৽য়৾৽য়ৼঢ়ৼয়য়য়৽য়৻৻ঢ়ঢ়ঢ়ঢ়

[Answer:] Even if they are the same with respect to the fact of non-establishment [by way of the objects' own entities], still, because the realizer [of that fact] are different, they are just not the same.

# न्येरत्। त्रमु: नुस्याये से मिर्डियाया प्रविधायी स्विधायी स्विधाय से स्विधाय स्वधाय स्वधाय स्वधाय स्विधाय स्वधाय स्वध

For example, with respect to a person who has committed a robbery, one person, although not knowing correctly [who did it], motivated by lack of closeness with that [robber] proclaims falsely, "This person committed the robbery." another person makes the accusation having actually seen that [robbery].

# 

Even though there is no difference between those two with respect to the fact, still, since there is a difference in the two realizers, of the one it is said, "That one spoke falsely," and of the other, "That one spoke truly."

# यक्षेत्र'त्। यक्षेत्र'त्व'त्यस्य विष्यायः विष्यायः विष्यायः व्यावायः विष्यः विषयः विष्यः विषयः विष्यः विषयः विष्यः विषयः विष्यः विषयः विष्यः विष्यः विष्यः विष्यः विषयः विष्यः व

When one investigates correctly with respect to the former, this leads to ill-renown and a sense of unseemliness, but such is not the case with the later.

तिन्द्रभाषात्र्वेश्वर्षेत्रभाषात्रभाषेत्रभाषात्रभा

#### वेशमञ्जूदशः श्री।

5

10

15

20

Similarly, here also, when the [mode] of understanding and speaking of Madhyamikas who know just as it is the self-entity of things [that is to say, non-inherent existence] is put together with that of Nihilists, who do not know just as it is the self-entity of things, the [modes of] understanding and expression are not alike.

यदेशक्षीयक्षेत्र, मन्त्रम् विषयः भूत्यम् स्वाधाः स्वधाः स्वाधाः स्वधाः स्वाधाः स्वधाः स

Some persons, when they understand the absence of inherent existence, understand that actions, their effects, and so forth have been refuted by reasoning and hence [assert] that cause and effect are unpositable in their own system.

This [passage by Chandrakīrti] refutes well the proposition [by some Tibetans] that although such persons are wrongly perspected with respect to the class of appearances ñ conventionalities ñ they have gained an unerring view of the class of emptiness.

देश्व हैंद्र यादें व चेद खुश हैंदर मी हैंदर यम अर्थेदर यम स्टर्य वेद सेदर गुर कुर व व्या गी हेदर व वेदार वेदा व वेदार में शही। यविष्य कुर यदे र वोद्याय स्था

Therefore, without emptiness coming to be an emptiness of the capacity to perform functions, you must have way of positing the dependent-arising of causes and effects even though there is no inherent existence.

Chandrakīrti's *Commentary on (Āryadeva's) "Four Hundred"* says:

### देःस्रमःवःषदःदेवःगदःवेग

In that case, regarding any object, [it is said]:

# श्चेशयायावीर्दियाप्तरा

दे'यबिव'यमग्रायायर्गे'यासेन।।

With respect to production, it does not come [here from somewhere] And, similarly, with respect to cessation, it does not go [from here to somewhere]. (XV.10ab)

## दे'ल'देश'यर'स्ट'चबेब'सेद'र्दे।।

5

10

15

20

25

[Hence], it definitely does not inherently exist.

Should someone ask, "If these do not inherently exist, then what is there?", the answer is as follows:

Those [objects] that are dependent-arisings, entities produced from the thoroughly afflicted and the very pure acting as causes, exist.

# यदेशन्ते प्रत्यवित्रसेदात्र देव के विवार्षेदा के सामित्र विवार स्वार्थ प्रत्य स्वार्थ प्रत्य स्वार्थ प्रत्य स्

This clearly answers the question, "If there is no inherent existence, then what does exist?"

The master Buddhapalita also gives an answer differentiating clearly between existence and establishment by way of [an object's] own entity; the *Buddhapalita Commentary on (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way"*, commenting on the twentieth chapter [of Nāgārjuna's *Treatise*] says:

Someone might say, "If [as you Madhyamikas say] time does not exist, and also causes, effects, and collections [of causes and conditions] do not exist, then what other thing does exist? Therefore, this [proposition by you Madhyamikas] is just a proposition of Nihilism."

Page 92 of 230

# यवर्यम्बर्क्षे देन्त्रायहेत्र्व्याप्रस्त्राच्यात्राहेत्। यवर्यम्बर्क्षे देन्त्रायहेत्र्व्याप्रस्त्राच्यात्राहेत्।

Answer: It is not so. Time and so forth are not feasible in the way in which you thoroughly imagine them to exist from [their own] entityness. However, those are established as dependent designations.

# ५ वैसन्दें सर्वे मञ्जूनायर्ने न्याः सूर्या कुरानी के विसान मन्या स्थान के स्वर्णने के स्वर्णने स्थान स्यान स्थान स्यान स्थान स्यान स्थान स

Thus [Buddhapalita] engages in refutation, saying, "Establishment [of phenomena] by way of their own entities as the Proponents of True Existence assert is not feasible."

# यहेव वश्यान्यश्यम वे श्वाय विश्व हेव र द्वेय विष्य प्रमाण्य स्थाय दे श्वीय विश्व विषय विषय विषय विश्व विषय विषय

Also, saying, "They are established as dependent designations," he says that dependent-arisings exist.

Thus, if you differentiate between the four ñ inherent existence and existence and no inherent existence and non-existence, you will overcome measureless wrong ideas. Further, you will not generate the mistake that the reasonings refuting inherent existence refute mere existence.

15 र्रेसर्ये र क्रुप्त आवश्य प्रमुखश्य प्रमुखश्य प्रमुखश्य त्र प्रमुख्य प्रमुष्य प्रमुख्य प्रमुख्य प्रमुख्य प्रमुष्य प्रमुष्य प्रमुष्य प्

Hence, since the main of the answers given by Madhyamikas to scholars who are Proponents of True Existence are given by way of [differentiating] these four, I have explained this a little.

### [Chapter 8. Reasoned Analysis]

### मानेश्वायामार्वेद्रचेद्रायाङ्क्रियाम्बर्धामार्थे साम्बर्धामार्थे सामित्रे सामित्र

[2/2] Second, showing that the discredit expressed does not overwhelm [our position]. This has four parts:

### ऽ रेग्रास्य प्राप्त प्राप्त प्राप्त प्राप्त के प्राप्त के प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्र प्त

1) [Conventional phenomena, forms and so forth,] cannot be overcome through a refutation upon investigating whether they can or cannot withstand analysis by reasoning;

# र्कत्रअश्चुताअः चुतायह्रवाश्चात्रश्चात्रश्चात्रश्चात्रश्चात्रश्चात्रश्चात्रश्चात्रश्चात्रश्चात्रश्चात्रश्चात्रश

2) they cannot be overcome through a refutation upon investigating whether they are or are not established by valid cognition;

# सु'यविदे भ्रे य'षेव'सेव'यहग्राबावमावकादर्गिग्यामासुव'दर्वेव'से'तुबायाद्या

3) they cannot be overcome through a refutation upon investigating whether there is or is not production of the four alternatives [from self, other, both, or neither]; and

#### न्द्रंश्चार्यः व्यान्त्रं न्यान्त्रं म्यान्त्रं म्यान्त्रं न्यान्त्रं न्यान्त् त्यान्त्रं न्यान्त्रं न्यान्त्यान्त्रं न्यान्त्रं न्यान्त्रं न्यान्त्रं न्यान्त्यान्यान्त्रं न्यान्त्रं न्यान्त्रं न्यान्त्रं न्यान्त्रं न्यान्त्रं न्यान्त्रं

4) and an indication that a refutation of all four alternatives—the existence, non-existence, and so forth of things—is unsuitable to discredit [the conventional existence of phenomena].

#### 

10

[1/4. Conventional phenomena, forms and so forth] cannot be overcome through a refutation upon investigating whether they can or cannot withstand analysis by reasoning.]

# 20 मञ्जाबात्यार्श्वम्बाद्यते क्रिंबादि प्रमादेवाये स्थाप्यायाय्ये प्रमायाय्ये प्रमायाय्ये स्थाप्याये स्थाप्य स्थाप्य

Proper analysis from the point of view of whether these phenomena, forms and so forth, have or do not have, or are or are not produced as, [their own] factual mode of being is called reasoning analyzing reality and reasoning analyzing the final [mode of being].

Since we [Madhyamikas] do not assert that the production of forms and so forth can withstand analysis by that reasoning, we do not have the fallacy of it [absurdly] following that [production and so forth] are truly existent things.

## 5 ग्रायाके'दे'द्रमाञ्चम्बादाबाद्युद्रसी'यार्बेद्राद्यः देग्राबादाबाविग्राद्यादे द्वार्येद्रायः देश्वराद्यद्वद्रस्थात्र

Some raise the qualm, "If these cannot withstand analysis by reasoning, how is it feasible that objects refuted by reasoning exist?"

This [misconception] is a case of mistaking as one two things—the **inability to withstand analysis by reasoning** and **being discredited by reasoning**.

# देःदर्ःचःसरःचें लेगान्तःसे। देःकेद्रप्रसुंद्रायदेःसेग्रसःयसःदर्गेगार्सेद्रावेन्यसुंचार्सेग्रसःवेन्यस्यस्यात्रेव्यस्यसः विविक्षःस्यास्यात्रेविक्षःस्यात्रेविक्षःस्यात्रेविक्षःस्यात्रेविक्षःस्यात्रेविक्षःस्यात्रेविक्षःस्यात्रेविक्षः

[607] Many who have such [error] propound that production and so forth exist, even though the reasoning analyzing reality does indeed refute them. Since such is senseless chatter, we [Madhyamikas] do not assert such.

# 

The meaning of being able or unable to withstand analysis by reasoning is to be found or not found by the reasoning analyzing reality.

# ने'यद'यत्ने'यक्कु'यदे'दश्चेय'य'यश्च

#### लेशमाश्चर्यायाः सूर्

10

15

20

25

Chandrakīrti's Commentary on (Āryadeva's) "Four Hundred" says:

. . . for our analysis is intent upon seeking inherent existence.

# मञ्जाबार्वाक्षरक्षेम् वात्रान्यः क्षेत्रावान्यः क्षेत्रावान्यः यदिः स्टः यत्नेदः व्येदः व्येदः वर्षेत्रः यः विदः वर्षे

As [Chandrakīrti] says, [the Madhyamika analysis] is seeking to find out whether or not forms and so forth have an inherent existence of production, cessation, and so forth.

10

15

20

# दे.के.ब.चंडियोश्चात्रात्त्रात्त्रात्त्रात्त्रात्त्रात्त्राच्यात्त्राच्यात्त्राच्चेत्राच्येत्राच्चेत्राच्चेत्राच्चेत्राच्चेत्राच्चेत्राच्चेत्राच्चेत्राच्चेत्राच्चेत्राच्चेत्राच्चेत्राच्चेत्राच्चेत्राच्चेत्राच्चेत्राच्चेत्रच्चेत्रच्चेत्रच्चेत्रच्चेत्रच्चेत्रच्चेत्रच्येत्रच्चेत्रच्चेत्रच्चेत्रच्चेत्रच्चेत्रच्चेत्रच्चेत्रच्येत्रच्येत्रच्येत्रच्येत्रच्चेत्रच्येत्रच्येत्रच्येत्रच्येत्रच्येत्रच्येत्रच्येत्रच्येत्रच्चेत्रच्येत्यच्येत्रच्येत्य

Thus, [reasoning] is searching out whether or not forms and so forth have production and cessation that are established by way of their own entities; it is not that this reasoning is searching out mere production and cessation.

# 

Therefore, this reasoning is said to be "analyzing reality" because it is analyzing whether production, cessation, and so forth are or are not established in reality.

# देःद्वार्यः देश्वारायः देशान्यः प्रत्यायः व्यायः व्य

When analyzed or sought with such a reasoning [consciousness], production and so forth are not found in the least and are said to be "unable to withstand analysis".

However, they are not refuted due to merely not being found by that reasoning. Rather, what is refuted [by such reasoning] is something that, if it exists, **must** be established by that reasoning but is not established by it.

The production and cessation of forms and so forth are established by a conventional consciousness; although those exist, they are not established by a reasoning consciousness. Therefore, how could they be refuted due to not being found by that [reasoning consciousness]?

## द्येरत्। भ्रेगःगेःवेश्वयश्चाः अर्हेर्यः युरादेशः भ्रेग्वाश्यायविदः वि

For example, it is like the way in which an eye consciousness does not find sounds, but [sounds] are not refuted by it.

## 25 देशनः श्रुः त्वावाः यः श्रेंवाश्रायः स्टावीः देंविश्वायुवः चत्रसः देविश्वः देविश्वः देविश्वः देविशः देवि

Therefore, if production, cessation, and so forth were established by way of their own entities, or were established in reality, they would have to be found by that reasoning.

# रेग्रायादेशमञ्जात्राक्षमञ्जात्राक्षमञ्चात्राक्षमञ्जाद्रमञ्जात्राचित्रभ्रोत्रमञ्जाद्रमञ्जाद्रभाष्ट्रमञ्जाद्रभाष्ट्

For, that reasoning is analyzing properly whether or not forms and so forth have production and cessation that are established by way of their own entities.

# 

Because such [reasoned analysis] does not find production and so forth, it refutes production, cessation, and so forth that are established by way of their own entities, or are established in reality.

## रदःवीदिंदिकाश्चयात्रःदेशःहेदःदर्विकायः त्यकात्रःहेदःयदेः ध्वीदःदि।

For, if they were established by way of their own entities, they would have to be found by that [reasoned analysis], but they are not.

#### 

For example, when a searcher who is definite to find a pot in the east if it exists there searches in the east for a pot and does not find it, through that, the existence of a pot in the east is refuted.

### त्रुयायार्थेद्रायार्थ्यादेशाहीः सुराविषाशा

20

25

15 However, how could the mere existence of pot be refuted by that?

# दे'त्रबित्रदुःस्टःषीःदें'त्र्यश्चात्रायदे'श्चे'त्राखेद्व्यःश्चेत्र्यःदेशयदे'द्व्यःययदे'त्र्यश्चात्रःस्वात्रःयःव्यःत्रःश्चे त्रायः हेद्रायः देशःस्टः त्रबित्रद्यः स्टःषीःदें'त्र्यंश्चात्रायदे'श्चे'त्रावेषाश्चायः धितःश्चे।

Similarly, when sought with Mādhyamika reasoning which is definite to find production that is established by way of its own entity if it exists, that non-finding of production refutes inherently existent production, or production that is established by way of its own entity.

# भ्रुं प्रार्डसाहे सूर विष्या दे सूर यद प्रति प्रमुप्य दे रस्

How could mere production be refuted? In this vein, Chandrakīrti's *Commentary on (Āryadeva's) "Four Hundred"* says clearly:

# देवे क्षेत्र दे क्षेत्र देवाश्वास्त्र स्वाप्त द्वाद्य द्वाद द्वाद

Therefore, since when one analyzes thus with reasoning, there is no [intrinsic] entity that exists in sense powers, objects, and consciousnesses, they have no establishment by way of their own entities.

# यात्राने ति दे देशका प्रत्यो दे विकासीय ति विकास प्रत्यो प्रत्ये के स्वास्त्र ति के स्वास्त

If they were established by way of their own entities, then, when analyzed with reasoning they would be observed even more clearly, in just that way, as existing by way of their own entities, but they are not.

देवे ख्री र र र प्रतिद ख्री श क्षें र र दे ले श मु र र ख्रुव में।

## वेदाःग्राद्यःय सःग्राह्यः ह्या

5

10

20

25

Therefore, they are established as "empty of inherent existence".

याज्ञत्र अञ्चात्र व्याप्त व्याप्त व्याप्त विष्ट्र विष

This Master [Chandrakīrti] says again and again that it is allowed that these conventionalities such as forms, sounds, and so forth, exist, but since they are not in the least established by the reasoning analyzing reality, that is, reasoning analyzing whether they exist inherently or not, reasoned investigation does not operate on them.

15 र्रम्बर्यते न्युन्य युक्षत्र व्याप्त विश्वाय में बाय के न्याय में न्याय में न्याय के माय विश्वाय के विश्वा

Also, he says many times that those who say that these conventionalities are destroyed when, upon reasoned analysis, they are not found by reasoning are unskilled in positing conventionalities.

मात्याके स्टायाके वास्त्र प्राप्त के प्राप्

If the reasoning analyzing whether or not they inherently exist were able to refute them, then it would be the case that one should engage in a great deal of reasoned investigation with regard to these conventionalities, forms, feelings, and so forth.

दे'तद्'च'वै'र्त्त्र्व्यंव'तदेते'म्बुद्'यक्षाद्वस्य वस्य अस्तर्द्द्व्यायक्षात्व'स्य स्वत्य स्वत्य स्वत्य स्वत्य देव'र्द्रेणक्ष'यक्ष'म्बिद्द्रं'त्वे'र्द्द्र्व्यं विद्याये स्वत्य स्वत्य स्वत्य स्वत्य स्वत्य स्वत्य स्वत्य स्व

However, such [refutation of conventionalities with reasoning] is refuted in all ways in the texts of this Master [Chandrakīrti]. Thus, those who assert that something's not being found by the reasoning analyzing whether it exists inherently or not means that it is discredited by that reasoning have wandered very far from the middle way.

Similarly, the meditative equipoise of a Noble One does not see the production and cessation of forms and so forth, but how could it be that it sees production, cessation, and so forth as non-existent?

5 रूप्याबीत व्यवस्था वार्ष प्रमाणित whether or not things inherently exist does not find production and so forth

Also, the reasoning analyzing whether or not things inherently exist does not find production and so forth, but it does not comprehend production, cessation, and so forth to be non-existent.

Therefore, not differentiating and apprehending as being the same the following [pairs]:

10

15

20

25

30

- (1) being unable to withstand analysis by reasoning and being discredited by reasoning;
- (2) production and cessation's not being seen by and been seen as non-existent by the exalted wisdom of meditative equipoise of a Noble One; and
- (3) production and cessation's not being found by a reasoning consciousness analyzing whether they inherently exist or not and production and cessation's being found to be non-existent by [that reasoning consciousness]

is seen to have generated error even in some earlier scholars, never mind those of the present. Therefore, those of intelligence should analyze in detail and differentiate these well!

We do **not** in that case assert that conventional consciousnesses are of greater power than valid cognitions having the ultimate as their object **nor** that conventional consciousnesses discredit valid cognitions having the ultimate as their object.

However, if you assert that conventional forms, feelings, and so forth are refuted by the reasoning analyzing reality when it, upon analyzing them, does not find them, [we answer] not only are [those forms and so forth] not refuted by that [reasoning], but also such an [erroneous] refuter [of forms] is discredited by valid cognition renowned in the world.

#### **रमु:अ:य:यह्म:य:यश्रा**

5

15

20

25

For, Chandrakīrti's Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way", VI.83 says:

यायाने हिंदायाय हैया है वा शेषा वेंदावा । यह या हे वा लेदा हैं वा यदी वेंदिया यदा शेषा । हिंदा प्राप्त के वा यदी प्राप्त से का शेषा प्राप्त शेषा । हिंदा प्राप्त से वा यदी प्राप्त से वा यदा ।

If you are not discredited by the world

Then refute these [conventionalities] which are based just on the world.

You and the world debate here / And afterwards I will rely on the stronger.

### 10 बेशम्बुद्रानिदा देवेरव्योवायम्बदा

Chandrakīrti's [Auto]commentary on the Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way" says:

विं चें 'डम' वे 'यहेम' हेव' श्री गुव 'हें च'चर्ज़्नेम' यम 'श्री चयर 'श्री च' विं 'हें कें मुबा 'के 'यम मुक्का प्रमाश्री च 'विं 'श्री बा 'यम 'श्री च' विं 'हें कें मुबा के 'यम मुक्का 'यम 'श्री बा 'यम 'श्

We, in order to overcome worldly conventionalities, abide in great hardship. You please eliminate worldly conventionalities.

न्याने हिंदी त्या वहेन हो अनि वहें प्राप्त के प्राप्त

दहिषाःहेवःश्चैश्वःवेःषार्वेऽ। । बेश्वामश्चरश्चायतेःश्चिरःमें। ।

[However] the world does discredit [your refutation].

दे.त्य|कॅ.च्.क्.व.१७१०]वे.तह्माहेब.बी.भीव.ह्याचच्च्यात्रः वीत्रः त्रीत्रः त्रीत्रः श्रीत्रः वीत्रः वीत्रः वीत्र क्ष्माबाद्यत्रः त्यात्रः विष्णात्रः विष्णात्रः विष्णात्रः विष्णात्रः वीत्रः वीत्रः वीत्रः वीत्रः वीत्रः वीत्रः क्ष्माबाद्यत्रः त्यात्रः विष्णात्रः विष्णात्रः विष्णात्रः विष्णात्रः वीत्रः विष्णात्रः विष्णात्रः विष्णात्रः व

[Chandrakīrti's] statement, "We, in order to overcome worldly conventionalities, abide in great hardship," refers to striving at the path in order to purify mistaken subjects, such as eye consciousnesses and so forth, and mistaken appearances of objects, such as forms and so forth.

## दे'द्रषा'र्रेषास्यते'द्रषाषा'वुरुक्षे'तर्देद्'ग्री। त्यस'र्षास्यते'द्रषाषा'वुरु'वेद्रेद्रिं।।

10

15

25

Hence we do not assert that these are objects to be negated by reasoning. Rather, they are taken as objects to be negated through cultivating the path.

With regard to [Chandrakīrti's] statement, "You please eliminate worldly conventionalities," [Chandrakīrti] is saying the following to those [Cittamatrins] who draw the parallel, "If you Mādhyamikas refute substantially existent dependent entities, we will refute your conventionalities with reasoning,": "If, just as we are able to refute the inherent existence of dependent entities, you [Cittamatrins] are able to refute conventionalities with reasoning, then we too will accompany you in that."

यद्भादी:रेग्रायास्यायेग्रायास्यायेग्रायास्यायेग्रायास्य स्वीत्रायायः स्वीत्रायायः स्वीत्रायायः स्वीत्रायाः स्व

With these words he is indicating that if [conventionalities] could be refuted with reasoning, we would want that since the difficult deeds of cultivating the path in order to overcome those [false appearances of conventionalities] would not be necessary. Hence this teaches that conventionalities are not refuted by reasoning.

यदः नेश्वायश्यावर् प्राप्तावर् दिवाहेत् चीः वावायश्यावर् प्रित्त्वेश्वायश्चर्यः विश्वायश्चर्यः विश्वययश्चर्यः विश्वययश्चरः विश्वययश्चरः विश्वययश्चरः विश्वययश्चरः विश्वययश्चरः विश्वययश्चरः विश्वययश्चरः विश्वययः विश्वय

Not only are they not refuted, but [Chandrakīrti] says that if they are [claimed to be] refuted, [that faulty reasoning refuting them] is discredited by worldly renown. Hence, such counterfeit reasonings are discredited by conventional consciousnesses, whereby we assert [conventional consciousnesses] to be more powerful than those [faulty reasonings].

देश्वत्रद्शां स्थान्त्राच्यात्रम्थात्राचीत्राच्यात्रम्थात्राचीत्रम्थात्रम्थात्रम्थात्रम्थात्रम्थात्रम्थात्रम्थ वर्ष्टम्थान्त्रम्थात्रम्थात्रम्थात्रम्थात्रम्थात्रम्थात्रम्थात्रम्थात्रम्थात्रम्थात्रम्थात्रम्थात्रम्थात्रम्था

Therefore, also when proponents of [true] existence refute conventionalities such as external objects and so forth upon entering into reasoned analysis, [those conventionalities] are not found by that reasoning, but they are not discredited [by it].

10

15

# [यःडेग्।याञ्चग्रसःसँग्रसः शङ्ग्दः दुःशेः दर्ग्या प्यतेः द्वायाव्याः द्वाः त्याः याः विद्याः हेवः पः स्टः द्यातः विद्याः विद्य

Some propound that the meaning of forms and so forth not being refuted conventionally is that they are not refuted for ordinary worldly persons, shepherds and so forth, but are refuted by the reasoning analyzing reality. This is very incorrect.

# हॅग'स्व'य'ते'केृत'त्र्रित्यते'देग्बायबादर्ग्गा'श्रे'दर्ग्गा'य'र्ग्ग्बाय'र्ष्य्त'ग्री। शुव्यश्वसार्त्वे'श्रावश्चित्र'यते'र्द्रम्शे'दर्ग्ग्गाय'य'र्

For, the discriminative have qualms as to whether these are or are not refuted by the reasoning analyzing reality; they do not have qualms concerning their non-refutation for those whose minds have not been affected by tenets.

# दे-क्रेन-न्युन-प्रते-देवाश्वायश्वायक्षायक्ष्मान्य-न्यायान्य-दे-चःश्चन-त्र्वान्यक्षिय्यते ख्वीद्र-देश

Also, [that proposition is incorrect] because if [forms and so forth] are refuted by the reasoning analyzing reality, that refutation must be done conventionally.

The fact that the reasoning analyzing reality does not refute production in all forms was also set forth clearly by the Master Chandrakīrti.

### **নন্ধ**'ন্মু'মন্ত'ন্ম্ৰীঝ'ম'ঝ**শ্বা**

20 His Commentary on (Āryadeva's) "Four Hundred" says clearly:

Should someone assert that it is being taught that compounded phenomena are without production due to a refutation of production in all ways by this analysis, then that [production of compounded phenomena and so forth] would not be like a magician's illusions.

Rather, it would be comprehensible through [examples] such as the son of a barren woman and so forth.

# हेत्रः केटार विष्णायमः रववुदाया क्षेत्रायमः वर्षायमः रववुमः यदिः रविष्णायामः ते । त्वायामः विष्णायमः रववुदाया क्षेत्रः यमः विष्णायमः रववुदाया क्षेत्रः यमः विष्णायमः रववुदाया क्षेत्रः यमः विष्णायमः विषणायमः विष्णायमः विष्णायमः विषणायमः विष्णायमः विष्णायमः विषणायमः वि

#### ন্বিশ্বশাশন্ম নাম্য নাম্য নাম্য

5

Fearing that in that case it would [absurdly] follow that dependent-arisings would not exist, we do not make comparison with those [the son of a barren woman and so forth] but rather make it with such things as a magician's illusions and so forth that are not contradictory with those [dependent-arisings].

# इसायमान्ध्रित्यादिकालेकायान्ते ने विंत्रान्ध्रित्यादे ने विकायार्थे।

The phrase "by this analysis" refers to the reasoning analyzing reality.

# 10 श्चेरियः स्थाया वस्र श्वरत् प्रत्यामा या बेश्वराय से रिमाया सुराय राष्ट्र प्रयास सुराय राश्चेराय राश्चे

"A refutation of production in all forms" refers to refuting all whatsoever production without affixing any qualification to the object to be negated.

### र्वे मन्यान्यान्याः स्वापान्याः मिन्दिनः वि

The meaning of "barren woman and so forth" is as follows:

#### 

If all production were refuted, then, like the son of a barren woman, the horns of a hare, and so forth, it would be a non-thing empty of all [capacity] to perform functions, and, in that case, there would be the fallacy that dependent-arisings would not exist;

#### 

...fearing that [fallacy], we refute true, or inherently existent, production since, unlike the non-existence of the production of the son of barren woman and so forth which are devoid of all capacity to perform functions, [there does occur production] that is like a magician's illusions and so forth.

### 25 षद'प्रते'प्रज्ञु'परे'र्श्योय'प'यश्र

Chandrakīrti's Commentary on (Āryadeva's) "Four Hundred" also says:

10

15

20

25

Qualm: "If eyes and so forth do not exist, because of that, how can these sense powers, eyes and so forth, be posited as entities that are fruitions of actions?"

**डे** कॅं चॅं डवा वीका यदी द्वसका ग्री द्वसाय मञ्जीव प्रति चॅं चें केंद्र प्रतावा वासा

[Answer:] Do we [Mādhyamikas] refute the fruitional entitiness of these? [We do not.]

[Opponent:] Since you prove eyes and so forth to be refuted, how could you not refute that?

विं वें क्या मी इस यम निर्मे नियम के सम्मानिक के सम्मानिक के सम्मानिक के सम्मानिक के सम्मानिक के सम्मानिक के स

[Answer:] [We do not refute that] because our analysis is intent upon seeking out inherent existence.

विद्यात्रमान्ते त्ये प्राप्त क्षेत्र प्राप्त क्षेत्र प्राप्त क्षेत्र क्षेत्र

We [Mādhyamikas] are here refuting that things are established by way of their own entities; we do not refute that eyes and so forth are products and are dependently-arisen fruitions of actions.

देवे'[612]द्वीरादे'र्बेद्रायश्चादालेवा'क्यायराञ्चीव'या'केद्र'त्र्यञ्चेद्रायांकीवा'या'र्बेवाश्चायांकेद्र'या'केद

Therefore, those exist, whereby those eyes and so forth that are explained as just being fruitions exist.

मुद्देग'रु'माश्चर्याद्या'रद्देश'विमा'र्यो पद्दे'र्द्दश'विमा'श्चेर्या'देश'विमा'श्चेश'विद्या'त्रीमा'र्येश विमा'रि'माश्चर्याद्या'र्या'र्येश'विमा'र्या' पद्दे'र्द्दश'विमा'श्चेर्या'र्येश'विमा'र्येश'येश'र्येश'विमा'र्येश'येश'र्येश'येश'र्येश'येश'र्येश'येश'र्येश'येश'र्येश'येश'र्य

Hence [Chandrakīrti] says very clearly that reasoning refutes just this and does not refute just that. Therefore, in that such a differentiation is stated on one occasion, since those where it is not stated are similar, it should be applied throughout.

Therefore, with regard to the fact that reasoning refutes existence by way of its own entity that exists objectively when sought from the object's own side and does not refute mere existence, since [Chandrakīrti] said that [the Mādhyamika] reasonings are intent on seeking out inherent existence, reasoning is searching out whether [something] does or does not inherently exist.

# रेग्रम् यात्वे र्यायात्वे स्वायात्वे स्वायाव्वे स्वाया

Therefore, this means that a refutation by that [reasoning] is a refutation of inherent existence. Hence these two should be differentiated.

### ५ दे.पर्यत्रात्रक्षात्रव्यक्षात्रस्थात्र्यात्र्यात्र्यात्रात्र्यात्र्यात्र्यात्र्यात्र्यात्र्यात्र्यात्र्यात्र

Not only are such actions and effects not refuted, but also it is said that Mādhyamikas must assert them.

## सुरादेवै:वर्धेशकेंद्रक्षा

The continuation of that passage [from Chandrakīrti's Commentary on (Āryadeva's) "Four Hundred"] says:

#### देते 'द्वेर' आवश्यायश्च प्रहेव 'दि देव 'त्य हे श्रूद 'प्यवित्य प्रहेत 'त्य हे द्वा श्रु अद्युव ' प' अ'प्य हुव 'प्यर' त्यश्च सुअश्च 'हेव 'प्यरे देव 'त्य हे श्रूद 'प्यवित स्व 'हेद 'प्य देव 'दि 'त्र 'हेद 'अहं द प' अ'प्यहुव 'प्यर' त्यश्च सुअश्च 'हेव 'प्यरे देव 'त्य हे श्रूद 'प्यवित स्व 'हेद 'त्य 'हेद 'त्र 'हेद 'त्र 'हेद

Therefore, the wise, not applying to worldly objects the analysis that has been explained, which accords with the perception of reality, assert [those objects of the world] as just inconceivable fruitions of actions.

#### 15 वैशक्षा

10

20

25

All the world is to be asserted in the manner of emanations arising from emanations.

# देःक्ष्रम्य स्पर्धान्त्रेयाः मान्नेश्वानी द्वारायम्य विश्वायते द्वार्यायते द्वार्या मान्य त्यायते देवायाय स्थातीय ह्या त्यायत् ह्यायत् ह्या त्यायत् ह्या त्यायत् ह्या त्यायत् ह्या त्यायत् ह्या त्यायत् ह्यायत् ह

Thus, within your presentation of the two truths, if the reasoning determining the ultimate discredits the presentation of conventionalities, then an internal contradiction in [your] presentation of the positing of the two truths has arisen, whereby...

# यदेव'य'ग्वेश्वस्यायम'यर्हेग्'य'त्यख्य'तु:ब्रूट'यदे'यावश्वायम'हे'सूम'र्हा

...how could you [be said to] have fully developed skill in positing the two truths?

# इस्राम्बन् देश्वर् दर्वेतः प्रत्यात्यः स्ट्राच्यात्यः स्ट्राच्यात

If there is not the slightest internal contradiction in those two presentations, then it is contradictory that the reasoning determining the ultimate refutes the presentation of conventionalities [as you say it does].

#### প্র্যান্থার্থান্থর শ্রাম্

5

10

15

20

25

Chandrakīrti's Clear Words also says:

बुँद्'ते'र्देब'द्याय'द्रद'त्तुब'र्द्देव'ग्री'यदेब'य'अश्चिम्यायश्चायश्चय्यय्ययः व्यवद्'य'यञ्जूत्वश्चर्यायश्चित्य'यश्चर्'दे इयायम'विदेत्त्व'द्यम'व्यम'ग्रीद्र'य'[613]धिब'र्वे।

You, who are unskilled in ultimate and conventional truths apply reasoning to some [conventional objects] whereas they are not [suitable objects for such analysis by] reasoning and destroy those [conventionalities].

विं तें ते गुत्र हें त्र ग्री प्रदेत प्राप्त स्वाप्त प्रदेश प्राप्त स्वाप्त स्वापत स्वाप्त स्वापत स्वाप्त स्वाप्त स्वाप्त स्वाप्त स्वाप्त स्वाप्त स्वाप्त स्वाप्त स्वाप्त स्व

Because we [Mādhyamikas] are skilled in positing conventional truths, dwelling in just the class of the world, we overcome with another reasoning [worldly conventional valid cognition] that other reasoning [i.e., your facsimile of reasoning] that you state for the sake of eliminating one class of conventionalities.

यहेगाहेत्रायदेः स्वारम्याद्धरायहेगाहेत्यदेः रूष्यायुग्यायायात्रात्रस्यायात्रित्। वित्रः स्वीत्यराधेत्याये स्वी

Like the elders of the world who [refute] those who fall from the worldly way, we refute only you;

गुनः हें य ने स धेन ने

we do not refute conventionalities.

बेबागुवः ह्रियायबाक्रयबायिः सुयायवराञ्चायार्वे वार्येवायी। गुवः ह्रियायीयवर्षे वार्ये विद्यास्त्रयार्थे दा

Thus [Chandrakīrti] says that he refutes only those propounders of tenets who fall from conventionalities and does not refute conventionalities.

Also, since he says that those who destroy conventionalities upon having applied reasoned analysis analyzing reality are unskilled in positing the two truths, a refutation of conventional forms and so forth by reasoning is not at all the intent of this Master [Chandrakīrti].

In brief, not just among Mādhyamikas, but also among Buddhist tenet systems of the land of Noble Ones [India] that make presentations of the two truths, there indeed does occur some other person's aligning of contradictions with regard to their presentation of the two truths.

5

विः सद्भिष्माञ्च । यात्राम् विष्मान् । यात्राम्

However, I propound that there is not even one who asserts that, of the two truths posited in their own system, the reasoning of the class of the ultimate eradicates conventional objects.

## [Chapter 9. Valid Establishment]

# 

[2/4] Second, [conventional phenomena, forms and so forth] cannot be overcome through a negation upon investigating whether they are or are not established by valid cognition.

With regard to the assertion of forms and so forth, we do not assert that they are not established by valid cognition, but rather that they are established by valid cognition.

## र्देन। इस्राम्तियहिषाहेत्रक्ष्यां सेत्राविषाणाश्चर्यायाहिः सूर्यायवरा सूर्यात्।

One might wonder then how the statement [in Chandrakīrti's *Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way"*, VI.31a], "In all respects the world is not valid," could be correct.

# यन्त्राचे यहेत् हेत् प्रदेशित स्वर्धान्य स्वर्यान्य स्वर्धान्य स्वर्यान्य स्वर्यान

[Answer.] This [passage] refutes that worldly consciousnesses such as an eye consciousness are valid with regard to reality. It is not refuting that they are valid cognizers with regard to all objects.

### 15 दे सूर यदा वह्रमावम्यायस्य

5

10

20

25

For, in this vein, Chandrakīrti's [Auto]commentary on the Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way" says:

# दे स्वरात दे विष्त के दाया सामा विषय सम्माय देव स्वर्थ विष्त स्वर्थ के देव सम्माय सम्म

In that case, only Noble Ones are valid with regard to the contemplation of reality. Non-Noble Ones are not.

# उःश्लेष्ट्रिषाःहेतःश्चीःषार्वेद्रायः वर्द्देद्रायः [614] ५ देद्द्रायः विश्वादे । विश्वादे | विश्वादे । विश्वादे | विश्व

They would be if one asserted that even worldly perception were valid with regard to analyzing reality due to asserting worldly expressions of discredit. However, [the *Supplement to Nāgārjuna's "Treatise on the Middle Way"*, VI.30 says]:

Page 108 of 230

म्यानित्र स्वास्त्र स्वास

If worldly [perception] were valid, Since the world would see reality, what need for others, Noble Ones? What would be accomplished by the noble path? It is not reasonable that the stupid be valid.

#### बेबागबुदबाया देवे द्वी त्र्योय दु

 $\frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \frac{1$ 

And, in the commentary following that, Chandrakīrti says [in the Supplement]:

Because the mere eye consciousnesses and so forth would ascertain reality, the hard work at ethics, hearing, thinking, meditating, and so forth for the sake of understanding the noble path would be fruitless. However, it is not thus.

#### देवे:ध्रेम

5

10

15

20

इस्राशुक् त्रहेषा हेव स्त्रं न स्त्रीव ने स्त्री हिन्। । ने केन स्नुष्य स्वरूप होव पार्वे न स्वरूप से ना ।

#### উঝাশাস্ত্রেমাথঝার্রা

Therefore [the Madhaymakāvatāra, VI.31ab, says]:

Because in all ways the world is not valid There is no discredit by the world on the occasion of reality.

#### रेग्राय दुग्रुप्यते त्र्रोवाय व्याप्य गुरा

5

10

20

25

Also Chandrakīrti's Yuktisastikāvrtti, Commentary on (Nāgārjuna's) "Sixty Stanzas of Reasoning" says:

### देक्षश्चीः विद्यान्ति द्वाति होत्ति विद्यान्ति ।

It is established that viewing just the existence of those [forms and so forth by those eye consciousnesses and so forth] is not seeing reality.

### देर्केर्योष्ट्वेरप्यर्डेसप्यन्यर्वर्वर्म्यायात्रा सेनाप्तरम्यास्यात्र्यस्य

Therefore, the Transcendent Lord said, "Eye, ear, and nose [consciousnesses] are not valid cognitions."

# 

Since he quoted that and so forth, it can be seen very clearly that what is being refuted is that [eye consciousnesses and so forth] are valid with regard to a special object—reality—and not [that they are valid] with regard to other objects.

### देॱक्षरः अः ग्रुकाः वः वद्येवाः अदः दुवदः वश्रुरः हेः

15 If it is not taken in this way, it [his statements] would be inconsistent.

#### 

If he were saying that if eye consciousnesses and so forth are valid with regard to conventional objects such as forms, sounds, and so forth, ...

then it would [absurdly] follow that there was no need to strive at the Noble path for the sake of viewing reality, this would be like saying that if the eye consciousness knows forms, it [absurdly] follows that the ear is purposeless for hearing [sounds]. And, if he is saying that [if eye consciousnesses and so forth are valid with regard to forms, and so forth], then it [absurdly] follows that striving at the Noble path for the sake of viewing forms, sounds, and so forth is senseless, since we very much assert this, what unwanted thing is proved by this?

#### র্বৈর ঘরী ঘরী ঘরী বার বর্মী বার বার মা

5

10

15

20

Qualm: Chandrakīrti's Commentary on (Āryadeva's) "Four Hundred" says: 15

यादायदार्थितः स्थायदार्थितः स्थायदार्थितः स्थायदार्थितः स्थायत् । स्थायदार्थितः स्थायद्वेतः स्

Those who, imputing these sense consciousnesses as direct perceptions, consider them to be valid with regard to other things also [are holding a position in which former and later statements] are very much unrelated.

ଆଂ  $rac{1}{4}$  प्रत्ये के साम के त्र के साम के त्र के साम का के साम के साम

"Non-deceptive consciousnesses" are seen in the world as just valid cognitions; however, the Transcendent Lord said that even consciousnesses, because of being composites of phenomena, have the qualities of being false and deceptive and are like a magician's illusions.

याद्मश्रादाः माल्व दुः श्रूदः प्रति श्रुधः प्रति । । स्त्रियः प्रति स्त्रियः स्ति स्त्रियः स्ति स्त्रियः स्त्रियः स्त्रियः स्त्रियः स्त्रियः स्त्रियः सत्ति स्त्रियः स्त्रियः स्त्रियः स्त्रियः स्त्रियः स्ति स्त्रियः स्ति स

Whatever has the qualities of being false and deceptive and like a magician's illusion is not non-deceptive because of being something that abides in one way but appears in another.

देश्वरश्चुर्रायां वे स्कृत्रायां के दिन्त स्वायां प्राया के कि स्वायां स्वायां के स्वायां स्वायं स्वायां स्वायां स्वायां स्वायां स्वायां स्वायां स्वायां स्वय

It is not reasonable to designate that which is such as a valid cognition because it would then [absurdly] follow that all consciousnesses would be valid cognitions.

appears in the Peking edition as

इसायाम्बद्गत्माबद्गपरिन्द्रसायाम्बद्गत्मुद्रम्परिन्द्रसायाम्बद्गत्मुद्रम्परिन्द्रसायाम्बद्गत्मुद्रम्परिन्द्रसायाम्बद्गत्मुद्रम्परिन्द्रसायाम्बद्गत्मुद्रम्परिन्द्रसायाम्बद्गत्मुद्रम्

This would appear to be a textual corruption in the Peking edition.

P5266, vol. 98, 259.4.1-259.4.4. This is commentary on XIII.1. Bracketed material in the translation is from *mchan*, 301.5ff. Note that a rather critical line which Dzong-ka-ba refers to several times in this chapter,

### बेबाक्षेयात्यः सँग्रायदे वेबायः इस्रायः इस्रायः द्वायः स्वायः स्वयः स्वायः स्वयः स्

How do you interpret this general refutation that consciousnesses such as those of the eye, and so forth, are valid cognitions?

# श्चेमान्द्रम्यञ्चरण्यत्रस्त्रभाश्चेत्। विकार्केम्बान्द्रस्थित्द्रयमःर्देम्बायदेःम्बुकार्वेदानुःस्वेयकाःवित्रमु

5 [Answer:] This statement, unlike the earlier one, "Eye, ear, and nose are not valid cognitions," [when context clearly showed that it was said with regard to the nature of reality] is a very great source of qualms, and therefore I will explain it in detail.

# ने सुरु सीमा मी भी श्राया या श्रेम् श्राया सुरु श्राया स्वार्य स्वार्

The refutation in this way that eye consciousnesses and so forth are direct perceptions and are valid cognitions is a refutation of the assertions of the logicians. Therefore, let us initially set forth what they assert.

#### प्रखे,प्रभीतात्रात्रा

15

20

25

Chandrakīrti's Commentary on (Āryadeva's) "Four Hundred" says: 16

# र्हेग्।गो'य'त्रदे'त्ते'त्रहेग्।हेत्यते'र्द्द्र्यायान्त्रत्यान्त्रत्यान्त्रत्यते'द्वेरःचित्रायान्त्रत्यान्त्रत्य त्युरायाधेत्रप्रत्याहेत्यम्त्रत्यम्त्रत्यम्त्रत्यम्

Because these logicians are not at all trained in worldly meanings, they need to train in them from the very beginning, like young children. Hence, in order to teach them,

### विंद्र-ग्री-अर्देव-शुअन्यद्वियाध्येव-लेश्चन्यस्याधेद-विद्याप्य-नुवें।

one questions them in detail, asking them, "What is the direct perception of your [system]?"

#### श्रुवाया नेवायायर्वि सुयाधीवार्वे।।

They answer, "A consciousness is a direct perception."

#### नेशयाहित्रपानेग।

"What sort of consciousness?"

#### यदर्हेग्यायद्रा

"That which is free from conceptuality."

P5266, vol. 98, 259.1.2-259.1.5. This is commentary on XIII.1. Sanskrit does not survive.

#### र्हेग्'यदर'डे'वेग्।

5

"What is this conceptuality?"

### यादः द्वायाः श्रीदः द्वायाः श्रुः श्रूषाः यादः श्रूष्याः यादः विष्यायाः विष्यायाः विष्यायाः विष्यायाः विष्याया

"It is the fluctuation of the discrimination involved in the superimposition of names and types to objects.

# 

Because they are free from that, the five sense consciousnesses operate on just the inexpressible own-character of objects and therefore are called 'direct perceptions'."

### 10 ब्रेशम्बुद्रश्रयः १६४। हॅ्मायः ५८ म्यावित्या वित्या वित्या विष्या विश्वायः विश्वायः विश्वायः वित्रायः वित्र

Hence they [the logicians] assert that a direct perception is a consciousness that is free from conceptuality and non-mistaken.

### दे'त्य'अ'त्वुत्य'च'त्ते'स्प्त्य'श्ची'सद्गती'अर्ळत्'तेद'हे'सूर'ग्वत्रश्चा'सूर'तहेत्'यर'श्चेद'यर

This "non-mistakenness" is an apprehension of the object's own character as it abides.

# 15 न्यन्येंदे नेश्वयदे सर्दे श्रुक्ष स्थाप्य प्रश्व स्थाप्य स्थाप स्थाप्य स्थाप स्थाप स्थाप्य स्थाप स्थाप्य स्थाप स्थाप

Hence, since [according to them] all five sense direct perceptions comprehend the self-character [of the object], the self-character of forms, sounds, and so forth is the object of comprehension of those five direct perceptions, and

#### 

therefore, they assert that that with regard to which these [direct perceptions] are valid cognitions is the self-character of the five objects.

# र्श्चेयः द्र्येवः दर्भेवेः दक्षदः प्रस्ति स्थान्तः स्थान्यः प्रस्ति स्थान्तः प्रस्ति । स्थान्ते स्थान्ते स्थान्ते स्थान्ते स्थान्ते स्थान्ते स्थान्ते । स्थान्ते स्थाने स्था

This master [Chandrakīrti], as will be explained, does not assert even conventionally an establishment [of objects] by way of their own entities or by way of their own character. Thus, how could he assert that these sense consciousnesses are valid with regard to the self-character [of objects]?

Therefore, the refutation here of these as being valid cognitions is a refutation of the assertion that they are valid cognitions with regard to the self-character of the five objects.

As for how the refutation [is done, that the sense consciousnesses are valid with regard to the self-character of the five objects] was refuted by the Transcendent Lord's statement that the consciousnesses are false and deceptive.

The statement that they are deceptive refutes that they are non-deceptive whereupon it is refuted that they are valid cognitions, for "that which is non-deceptive" is the definition of "valid cognition".

#### র্বৈর নশ্বু শ্রেশবাশ শাদ শীর শ্বুরার।

10

15

20

25

In what way are they deceptive?

### इसायाम्बन्दानुमन्त्रायादे द्रिकार्यात्याद्वसायाम्बन्दानुष्ट्रद्वायात्वन्दिः भिन्दिः

This is stated [by Chandrakīrti, see above] "...being something that abides in one way but appears in another."

# 

That is to say, the five objects, forms, sounds, and so forth, whereas they are **not** established by way of their own character, **appear** to the sense consciousnesses to be [established by way of] their own character, and, therefore, those [sense consciousnesses] are not valid cognitions with regard to the own character [of their objects].

In brief, [Chandrakīrti's] intended meaning is that the sense consciousnesses are not valid cognitions with regard to the own character of the five objects because of being deceived in terms of the appearance of own character of the five objects.

#### खुत्य'सू' मदःषी' अर्ळव' केद्' ग्रीका क्केंद्रका मालेव 'तु 'मदः अर्ळव' तु 'श्वेद मा

This is because, whereas those five objects are empty of own character (*rang gi mtshan nyid*), they appear to have own character (*rang mtshan*).

### न्ये रत्। त्रु माने बाक्ष्यायाय देन बायाय विवास्त्र सान् प्रमान

It is like, for example, a consciousness perceiving two moons.

यदे त्यान्देश्वार्यमञ्जान्य विष्ण्या व

With regard to this, the proponents of [true] existence assert that if forms, sounds, and so forth did not exist inherently, that is, were not established by way of their own character, they would be non-things empty of all capacity to perform functions.

ष्णुयाष्ट्रतेः स्टांशक्षंत्रायार्थत् श्रुशाक्षंत्रायार्थाः श्राक्षंत्रायाः स्वायाः स्वायाः स्वायाः स्वायाः स्व वीः सक्षंत्रात्वेतः स्वायाः स्

Therefore, they assert that if [sense consciousnesses] are not direct valid cognitions with regard to the own-character of the five objects, then there is no way for there to be valid cognition with regard to the five objects, and if [the sense consciousnesses] are valid cognitions with regard to the five objects, then they serve as a valid cognitions with regard to their own character.

For this master [Chandrakīrti], if something were established by way of its own character, [616] or its own entity, it would be true, whereby a valid cognition that posited a truly established object would have to serve as a valid cognition with regard to [the object's] own character. However, because objects are false, the valid cognition that posits them need not serve as a valid cognition with regard to their own character.

#### বল্প ব্যক্ত ব্যক

15

20

25

यहेगाहेव प्रति अर्थे प्रति व के द्राया प्रति प्रति व के द्राया प्रति व के प्रति के कार्य के कि प्रति के के प्रति के

For, Chandrakīrti's Commentary on (Āryadeva's) "Four Hundred" says: 17

It is not reasonable for worldly perception to open up perception of reality for it is valid in terms of only the world and the objects observed by it are established as having the qualities of being false and deceptive.

This is commentary on XIII.12.

10

15

20

# 

Therefore, since [Chandrakīrti] is refuting that [sense consciousnesses] are valid cognitions with regard to the own character [of objects] there is no need to refute that they are merely valid cognitions. Therefore, he is not refuting in general that there are valid cognitions among conventional consciousnesses.

#### <u>देःक्षःयाध्येवःवःयाञ्चःवदेःवेश्वःयःवेःविह्याहेवःवःर्वदःयःवेदःतुःयर्वेदःवःवेश्वःयाश्चदश्रःयःवेःदेशश्चाहे।</u>

Otherwise—[that is, if Chandrakīrti were refuting in general that there are valid cognitions among conventional consciousnesses]—it would not be reasonable for him to say, "...non-deceptive consciousnesses are seen in the world as just valid cognitions,"

#### 

because he would have refuted that there were valid cognitions among all whatsoever conventional consciousnesses.

# क्षेत्राम्बर्धाः प्रकार्त्ताः नेतिः द्वीरानेः क्षेत्रः क्षंत्रः अप्यादित्रः क्षेत्रः विश्वाः क्षेत्रः क्षेत्रः विश्वाः विश्वः क्षेत्रः विश्वः व

Also, this would contradict the statement in Chandrakīrti's *Clear Words*, <sup>18</sup> "Therefore, in this way it is posited that the world realizes objects by way of the four valid cognitions," in which he makes a presentation of direct, inferential, scriptural, and exemplary valid cognitions.

### 

Valid cognitions and objects of comprehension that are established by way of their own entities are refuted; however, valid cognitions and objects of comprehension that are dependently-posited dependent-arisings are not refuted.

#### रेकिर्यश

25 That same text [Chandrakīrti's *Clear Words*] says: <sup>19</sup>

Those are established through mutual dependence. When valid cognitions exist, then there are objects that are the objects comprehended. When objects that are the objects comprehended exist, then there are valid cognitions.

Dzong-ka-ba's text, 617.11, corrected from 'jig rten gyi to 'jig rten gyis in accordance with the Peking edition of Chandrakīrti's text, 13.4.8, and mchan, 311.4.

This follows in Chandrakīrti's text immediately from the preceding citation.

# र्वत्रः सन्दरम् विष्यः तुः मृत्रेश्चर्टे र्वे रित्रः मुश्चर्या तुः सन्धितः वे । । विश्वरम् सुद्रश्चे । ।

However, the two, valid cognitions and objects of comprehension, are not established by way of [their own] entities.

देश्वात् स्यास्यात्र स्वात्र स्वीत् स्वात् स्वीत् स्वात् स्वात्य स्वात् स्वात

Therefore, if the sense consciousnesses are without the impairment of being affected by internal and external causes of error such as dimness of sight, and so forth, their being mistaken in terms of appearance, in that through the force of being affected by ignorance they apprehend objects to inherently exist whereas they do not inherently exist, does not discredit their being conventionally non-erroneous.

#### तह्यायायद्यागुर।

10

15

20

25

Chandrakīrti's Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way", [VI.24-25] says:

Also perceivers of falsities [that is, worldly consciousnesses,] are asserted as of two types, Those with clear sense faculties and those with defective sense faculties.

A consciousness of which the sense faculty is defective

Is asserted as wrong in relation to a consciousness of which the sense faculty is good.

यार्वे र त्यारे र त्यारे र त्यार त्यारे त्याये त्यारे त्यारे त्यारे त्यारे त्यारे त्यारे त्यारे त्यारे त्य

Those objects realized by the world
That are apprehended by way of the six unimpaired sense faculties
Are true in terms of just the world. The rest
Are posited as unreal in terms of just the world.

### डेबाचःब्रुन्यदेः नेबायःन्र्युयायाचःब्रुन्यदेः नेबायानेन्याम्ब्रिकाने द्वीतः चेत्रायायाने वात्रिकानाने ।

Thus, the two, conventional consciousnesses and objects, are posited as of two types, erroneous and non-erroneous, in terms of just a conventional consciousness.

न्वरार्थि यात्रार्वेन् प्राये क्वु व्यन्त र्थेन् प्राये क्वे यह वा यह वा यह वा यह वा यह वा विकास वा क्षेत्र वा विकास वा क्षेत्र वा विकास वा क्षेत्र वा विकास वा वितास वा विकास वा विकास वा विकास वा विकास वा विकास वा विकास वा विका

With regard to internal causes of impairment to a sense faculty, Chandrakīrti's [Auto]commentary on the Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way" says:<sup>20</sup>

Dimness of sight, jaundice, and so forth as well as eating *dadhurd*<sup>21</sup> and so forth are causes of impairment to the sense faculties that exist internally.

#### धुःर्रेयावार्षेरायावी देखेरायश

10

15

20

With regard to external [causes of impairment to the sense faculties], that same text says:<sup>22</sup>

हित्यास्य न्दरसु न्दरसे विद्याला से विद्य

Sesame oil, water, a mirror, <sup>23</sup> sounds expressed in caves and so forth as well as sunlight at special times and places are external causes of impairment to the sense faculties.

दे'द्रमा'त्रे'द्रयद'र्ये'त्यमत्त्रेद्र्यस्य व्यक्तियः व्यक्तियः द्रमा'त्रमा अद्यक्षम्य म्यान्त्रवः द्रद्रम्य क्ष्यम् अत्यक्ष्यः व्यक्तियः विवक्तियः विवक्तिय

For these, without there being an internal source of impairment to the sense faculty, cause the apprehension of reflections, echoes, a mirage as water, and so forth.

दे'चलेव'र्दु'भ्रेग'द्रबुक्ष'भ्रावव'त्य'र्सेग्र्यापस'रच'र्दुःश्चुर'चते'र्स्थ्यास'द्रःश्चुर'व्य'र्सेग्र्सपर'द्रग'गुर'वेस'यर'वुर्दे।

This should be understood similarly also with regard to the mantras, medicines, and so forth used by conjurers and so forth.

This is commentary immediately following VI.25.

Hubert Decleer supplied the information that this is a tall plant with white flowers that grows wild in the Nepal area. In small amounts it is a potent hallucinogen; in larger amounts it is poisonous.

This follows immediately from the previous citation.

<sup>23</sup> mchan, 315.5 explains that the first three give rise to reflections and hence to mistaken eye consciousnesses.

# स्त्रीं महिंद्र प्रमान्ने द्वा प्रमान्न । स्वर्ष्ण प्रमान्ने स्वर्षः स्वरं स्वर

With regard to what impairs the mental [sense faculty], there are those [just mentioned above] as well as incorrect tenets and so forth and facsimiles of inference.

5 वेशम् वात्रः अञ्चतः द्वारा प्रदान प्राप्त किया अप्तारं अपतारं अप्तारं अप्तारं अप्तारं अपतारं अप्तारं अपतारं अपता

Thus [Chandrakīrti] says that bad tenets and facsimiles of reasons are causes corrupting the mental consciousness and also says that sleep and so forth are causes corrupting the mental [consciousnesses] of dreams and so forth.

े देश्च अप्ते प्राप्ते प्रदेश क्षु दश्च [619] ग्री प्युत्प विश्व श्रिक प्राप्त प्राप्त क्षेत्र प्राप्त प्राप्त क्षेत्र प्राप्त प्राप्त क्षेत्र प्राप्त प्राप्त क्षेत्र क्षेत

Therefore, even though the object of the mode of apprehension of ignorance does not exist even conventionally, as will be explained below, here the impairment of being affected by ignorance should not be held as a cause of impairment.

ाऽ वायाक्ते, द्वदः वृक्षायाक्षः व्यवित्राक्षां वावव्यक्षे वावव्यक्षे वावव्यक्षेत्र वाक्षेत्र व्यव्यक्षेत्र व्यवक्षेत्र विवक्षेत्र विवक्

[Qualm:] If the five sense consciousnesses which do not have the impairment of other causes of error are non-mistaken conventionally, then the own character that appears to them must exist conventionally.

#### ने'यदः र्श्वेयः दर्धेवः यदे 'यत्वेदः यः अः योवः र्वे। ।

20 However, the master [Chandrakīrti] does not assert such.

Therefore, [the sense consciousnesses] must be asserted as mistaken, in which case it is not feasible that those consciousnesses be valid cognitions that posit forms, sounds, and so forth conventionally.

#### च'सूर'रु'ग्राञ्चग्रस'र्सेग्रस'त्यत्युत्य'यदे'ध्वीर'र्दे'ले'त्रा

25 For, they are mistaken with regard to forms and so forth conventionally.

15

20

# यर् प्रति । यर् प्रश्लेष्ठ । यर् प्रति । यह प्रति । यह

*Answer.* With regard to this, the master Bhāvaviveka asserts that forms and so forth conventionally have natures that are established by way of their own character.

अंश्रम्भार्यस्थात्त्रात्त्रम्थात्यः स्टाणीः श्रम्भन्तिः त्रीत्त्रम्थात्यः स्टाणीः श्रम्भन्तिः स्टाणीः स्टा

For, when refuting the Cittamātrins' assertion that because imputations do not have entities that are established by way of their own character, they do not have an entityness of own character, he refutes them within investigating "imputation" in two ways—as "imputer" and as "imputed"—and says that if they assert that terms and awarenesses that impute entities and features do not have an entityness of own character conventionally, they are mistakenly denying dependent entities.

### 

Thus, it is clear that he asserts that dependent entities conventionally have natures that are established by way of their own character.

## 

Moreover, Bhāvaviveka's *Prajñāpradīpamūlamadhyamakavṛtti (Lamp for (Nāgārjuna's) "Wisdom", Commentary on the "Treatise on the Middle Way")* commenting on the twenty-fifth chapter [of Nāgārjuna's text] says:<sup>24</sup>

दिनः नाया हे माञ्चनाश्चालेश्वानु प्यान्य स्थित त्यान्य स्थित स्थित स्थान्य स्थित स्थान्य स्थित स्थान्य स्यान्य स्यान्य स्थान्य स्थान्य स्थान्य स्थान्य स्थान्य स्थान्

If you say that the entityness of imputations, that is, the mental and verbal expressions of "form," does not exist, you are mistakenly denying things,

धीन्यायार्हेन्यान्याक्षेत्रातृत्यार्हेन्यायाः श्रुरायायन्यायाये हिराहे।

for you are mistakenly denying mental and verbal expressions.

Page 120 of 230

P5253, vol. 95, 253.4.6-253.4.7.

# बेबाम्बद्यानेटा देवे व्योवायम् ५५५५ श्रुवः स्याम्बेम्बायह्या बुम्बायीया

5

10

20

The master Avalokitavrata in his explanatory commentary on that [that is, in the *Prajñāpradīpaṭīkā* (Commentary on (Bhāvaviveka's) "Lamp for (Nāgārjuna's) 'Wisdom'") says:<sup>25</sup>

বিশ্ব বিশ্

This [statement by Bhāvaviveka] indicates the following: The Yogacārins' say that the entities of imputations are without entityness due to not having entityness in the sense of own character.

चीत्राच्यां के प्रत्याची का के प्रत्याची का का के प्रत्याची के प्र

If the entityness of conceptions, or mental expressions, and the imputation of conventions, or verbal expressions, of entities and attributes such as "form" are without entityness due to being without entityness in the sense of character, this is unsuitable, since one would be falsely denying conventionally things that are dependent entities.

15 विश्वास्थान्दः र्स्त्रेश्चान्यस्थान्यते म्वतान्यदः या श्वास्थान्त्र द्वास्थान्य स्थान्य स्

Thus he says that if you assert that dependent entities that are included within terms and awarenesses do not have an entityness in the sense of character conventionally, it is a false denial.

दे'या सक्ष्व कि दे दे वि से दाय के सक्ष्य कि दाने स्वर्ध के प्रति स्वर्ध के प

"Character" in the phrase, "do not have an entityness in the sense of character" refers to "own character" or "inherent existence", and the Cittamātrins assert that imputations do not have such.

P5259, vol. 97, 292.2.8-292.3.2. Dzong-ka-ba's citation of the passage differs on two points from the passage as found in the Peking edition of Avalokitavrata's text. Dzong-ka-ba, 620.1.2 reads tshig tu brjod pa tha snyad 'dogs pa'i ngo bo nyid hang yin pa de, Avalokitavrata's text, 292.3.2 reads: tshig tu brjod pa tha snyad 'dogs pa'i kun brtags pa'i ngo bo nyid hang yin pa de. Also, Dzong-ka-ba's text, 620.3, reads: gzhan dbang gi dngos po la, whereas Avalokitravrata's text, 292.3.2, reads: gzhan dbang gi ngo bo la. Both of Dzong-ka-ba's variants make the text express more clearly the point he is trying to make: that to say that mental or verbal conventions lack entityness in the sense of own-character is to deprecate dependent entities. Thus it is possible that Dzong-ka-ba knowingly amended the text.

in the Madhyamakālokaj.

10

15

#### ग्वत्र'द्रयर'याळ्त्र'क्रेट्र'रे'र्स्य्र'स्ट्र'य्वेत्र'र्स्य

However, because dependent entities do have such a character, they exist inherently.

Nonetheless, because they are produced from other, they are without an entityness in the sense of being produced from themselves and hence it is asserted that they are without entityness [of production].

### য়৾৾<del>ज़ॕ</del>ॖ॔ॸॺॕऻ॔ॸॹॱढ़ॺॖॏॴॱॴॺॱॻॖॸॱॸॖ॓ॱॻढ़ॏढ़ॱॸॖॱॻॺॸॖॱढ़ॺॱळॕॹॱॿয়ॺॱॼॸॱॸॕॱॻॕॱक़ऀॸॖॱऄॸॱॻॱॸॺॕऻॸख़ॱॻॱॼढ़ॱॸॖॱॺऻॶॸॹॱॻॱॴ

[Buddha] explained it thus in the *Sūtra Unraveling the Thought* and said that the statement [in the Perfection of Wisdom Sūtras] that all phenomena do not have [their own] entityness is based on another intent.

# र्श्चेयः द्वेतः गृः अः यः भृः यश्चात्वेः अर्देः देशः देवः केदः अदः यः गृश्चुशः श्चीः द्वेदः यः यः यश्चतः यश्चि स्यः हुः यश्चतः यदेः श्चीतः देशः यदेः देवः विद्वां यात्वात् यदः यश्चितः विद्वां यात्रः यश्चितः विद्वां यात्रः य

With regard to this, the master Kamalaśila said<sup>26</sup> that because that sūtra [the  $S\bar{u}tra\ Unraveling\ the\ Thought]$ , through indicating the intended meaning of the three non-entitynesses,<sup>27</sup> thoroughly teaches the middle path free from the two extremes, it sets up the system (*gzhung*) of only the definitive meaning.

Thus, he asserts that [the *Sūtra Unraveling the Thought*) teaches the meaning of the middle way in that [it teaches] the non-existence of the ultimate entityness superimposed on dependent entities, since such is an imaginary, and avoids false denial due to [teaching that] conventionally dependent entities have own character.

### 20 र्र्ज्ञ्च प्रत्येव प्रदेश्यम् अस्त प्रत्यम् अस्त क्षेत्र प्रत्यम् प्रत्ये ।

Hence this master [Kamalaśıla] also asserts that [objects] have own character conventionally.

in the *Madhyamakāloka*j.

mchan, 321.1. The three non-entitynesses are non-entityness in terms of character, mtshan nyid ngo bo nyid med pa; non-entityless in terms of production, skye ba ngo bo nyid med pa; and an ultimate non-entityness, don dom pa ngo bo nyid med pa.

CP: Hopkins translates the three non-natures, *ngo bo nyid med pa*, as character-non-nature, *mtshan nyid ngo bo nyid med pa*; production-non-nature, *skye ba ngo bo nyid med pa*; and an ultimate non-nature, *don dom pa ngo bo nyid med pa*.

#### वह्या'वर्षोवार्'हें बी

5

10

द्येराव। श्रुकायाक्त्वाची मालकाद्याद्यात्राम् वास्त्राम् वास्त्राम्याम् वास्त्राम् वास्त्राम् वास्त्राम् वास्त्राम् वास्त्राम् वास्

Chandrakīrti's [Auto]commentary on the Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way" says: 28

For example, a snake is an imaginary with regard to a rope, but is thoroughly established with regard to an actual snake. Similarly, a [final] nature is an imaginary with regard to dependent entities, which are dependently-arisen fabrications.

यत्र प्रमानुक्षा नुः ख्रिक्षा । यत्र प्रमानुक्षा विकार क्षेत्र क्ष

However, as the object of a Buddha, it is posited as thoroughly established. Having come to know the presentation of the three entitynesses [in this way], one should explain the intended meaning of that sūtra [the Sūtra Unraveling the Thought]

सर्ने म्याप्त स्थान स्य

#### 15 বিশ্বামন্ত্রির বিশ্বামন্ত্র বিশ্বামন্ত বিশ্বামন্ত্র বিশ্বামন্ত বিশ্বাম

This was spoken [by Chandrakīrti] in commentary on the statement [in his *Madhyamakāvatāra (Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way")*, VI.97bc]:

Whatever sūtra has as its meaning the explanation of that which is not reality And sets forth interpretable objects, having been realized [as such], is to be interpreted.

#### 20 अर्दे 'दर्गेदश्व' त्र्ये था क्यी दें 'दें 'हेद 'वाश्वुश क्यी 'हुस अववा 'दुद 'दें व 'दु 'दा वेद 'दा र वाश्व था

Thus it is clear that he asserts that the presentation of the three entitynesses in the  $S\bar{u}tra$  Unraveling the Thought requires interpretation.

Further, since for [Chandrakīrti's] own system, imaginaries are taken as an inherent existence of dependent entities, [Chandrakīrti] does not assert that dependent entities conventionally have inherent existence, that is, are established by way of their own character.

Dzong-ka-ba's citation of this passage is a gloss, rather than a direct quote.

15

# स्रोत्राच्याः स्रोत्राचात्र्यात्रात्त्रात्रात्त्रम् वास्यायात्रात्वत्रात्त्रम् वास्याः वात्रव्याः वात्र्याः वात्रव्याः वात्रव

The Cittamātrins [assert the non-existence of entityness of own character with regard to imaginaries but], except for imaginaries, do not assert the non-existence of entityness in the sense of own character with regard to dependent entities and thoroughly established phenomena.

#### रे'गक्रिश्वायः स्टामी'र्दे'र्वेश्वायुवायदे'श्रस्तंव क्रिन्द्रशास्त्रायदेन्द्रशास्त्रायदेन्द्रशास्त्रायदेन्द्रशास्त्र

Thus, they assert that those two have own character, or inherent existence, that is, that they are established by way of their own entities.

### अर्दे 'दर्गेदश्व वोवावान कें चिरायहेत यर श्रूटाया देवे हिरादे निर्मेश देव 'द्रायर श्रुवायर वर्दे दाया

It appears that this assertion relies mainly on the *Sūtra Unraveling the Thought*, and, therefore, they assert that those two are ultimately established.

# र्श्वेत'न्यंत्र'श्वरश्चमुश्चमुत्रशन्दर्श्वेत'न्यंत् न्नुप्तण्याण्यायते स्टर्णः अर्द्धत'र्छन्'मुश्चमुत्ययते देवेत'स्य स्त्रुत्त'यते स्वर्षेत्र'या स्त्रेत्र'या स्त्रेत्र'या स्वर्षेत्र'या स्वर्येत्र'या स्वर्षेत्र'या स्वर्षेत्र'या स्वर्येत्र'या स्वर्षेत्र'या स्वर्षेत्र'या स्वर्येत्र'या स्वर्

With regard to [their asserting these as ultimately established], the masters Buddhapālita and Chandrakīrti assert that if something has an entity that is established by way of its own character, it must be truly established,

## क्केंच'द्रचेंद'येग्नांच'स्द्र'यद्वेद'य'केंग्नांचकांदे'दे'र्डंअ'ग्रीकार्देद'द्रअ'यर'श्चुय'यर'श्चे'रश्चुर'यर'यतेदेद'।

whereas the master Bhāvaviveka and so forth assert that merely due to that, something does not become truly established.

# 20 म्वन्यायाः स्वास्त्र

Furthermore, the Cittamātrins say that minute particles individually are not the object of a sense consciousness because they do not appear [to it] and also the aggregation of many [minute particles] is not the object of those [sense consciousnesses] because of not substantially existing.

### 25 त्रु न्यामित्रासु सूरायायवित र्वे वित्रासु सायते यत्र त्रु हिंगामे यय राया या

[They say that] this is like the appearance of two moons. As an answer to their propounding such, Bhāvaviveka's *Blaze of Reasoning* says:<sup>29</sup>

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>29</sup> There are substantial differences beween Dzong-ka-ba's citation of the passage and how it appears in Bhāvaviveka's text. Dzong-ka-ba would seem to be giving a gloss.

### यान्ययायाः त्यात्राच्यात्वात्रः विवादान्यात्यात्वात्यात्वात्यात्यात्वात्यात्यात्वात्यात्यात्वात्यात्यात्वात्यात्य

If you are establishing that a single minute particle which is not a composite is not an object of a sense [consciousness], then you are proving that which is [already] established.

### ष्ठीःस्रदेःत्यत्रःतृःष्यदः

10

15

20

As an answer to the latter [position, Bhāvaviveka] says:<sup>30</sup>

# यात्राके देवाक्षात्राचित्राच्यात्र क्षात्राच्यात्र क्षात्राच्यात्र क्षात्र कष्ण क्षात्र क्

If you are propounding that an aggregation of minute particles of one type in one place is not the cause [of a sense consciousness] taking as the reason, "because of not substantially existing", the reason is just not established for the other [that is, for me, the person to whom you are propounding such].

# 

Why is as follows. This and that entity of minute particles of one type stick together and help that [aggregation], whereby they serve as branches of the entity of the object. From having done this, an awareness having the aspect of an appearance of minute particles as an aggregation arises.

# देवाबागडेवायदेखः प्रयात्र्यक्षाबायादेदायावाद्यायायावाद्यायायावाद्यायावाद्यायावाद्यायावाद्यायावाद्यायावाद्याया

Like minute particles, we assert pots and so forth to be substantially established, due to their being composites of minute particles of one type.

# यारायी द्वीराखार्या याराह्र श्रायक्चित्र तर्श्वायते यात्र वार्तित त्या दे हिश्वा हेत् द्वारा तर्देत् या हेत्र

A minute particle has a nature of being an aggregation of the eight substances, and you assert it to be substantially [established].

Therefore, just so, pots and so forth, which have natures of being aggregations are substantially established. A single thing [that is not an aggregation] is just not established.

This passage continues almost directly from the preceding quote, and again Dzong-ka-ba's citation is a gloss, rather than a direct quote.

# बेश्चास्त्यास्य स्वाप्त्र स्वाप्त्र से से त्र शत्य द्वेश मुः मुः द्वे दि । वित्य स्वाप्त्र स्वापत्र स्वाप्त्र स्वाप

Thus it appears that [Bhāvaviveka] asserts that each of the minute particles of a composite is a cause of a sense consciousness and is substantially existent and that he asserts [each of these] to be the ultimate of minute particles whereby he asserts particles to be observed object conditions [of sense consciousnesses].

देवे खेर-द्यदः वेश्वायः खेर्वित्यः स्वाय्यः स्वायः स्वायः स्वायः स्वायः स्वायः स्वायः स्वायः स्वायः स्वायः स्व द्रायः स्वायः द्रियः स्वायः स्वाय

Therefore, [Bhāvaviveka] asserts that sense consciousnesses which are not affected by the internal and external causes of error explained earlier are non-mistaken and he asserts an observed object condition [of a consciousness] conventionally in accordance with the Sautrāntikas.

#### दह्या'दश्वेय'यश्वे

5

10

15

20

25

Chandrakīrti's [Auto]commentary on the Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way" says: 31

It should be known that those who propound that just those things which are propounded in the system of the Sautrāntikas to be ultimates are asserted in the Mādhyamika [system] as conventionalities are speaking through mere lack of knowledge of the reality [that is expressed in Nāgārjuna's] *Mūlamadhyamikakārika* (*Treatise on the Middle Way*).

Also, those who think that whatever are propounded by the Vaibhāśikas to be ultimates are conventionalities for the Mādhyamikas only do not know at all the reality [set forth in] the Mūlamadhyamikakārika.

यदे 'सुर यहेषा'हेत 'या प्रति श्राप्य के अपन सम्बाधिक के प्रति के अपन सम्बाधिक के अपन सम्बाधक के अपन सम

Dzong-ka-ba's citation of the passage differs on a few small points from how the passage appears in ChandrakĪrti's text; none are substantive.

#### युग्रासायदे ते तुत्र सॅट्साधित यदे ते साम्याय द्वारा तुरा ।

The wise should ascertain that this system is uncommon.

# बेशम्ब्रुद्रश्यम् इत्याप्त्रम् इत्याप्ते मुपायम्बर्ध्वत् व्याप्ते स्वाप्त्रम् विश्वाप्तः स्वाप्ति स्वाप्ति स्व प्रवितः स्वाप्ति ।

Thus [Chandrakīrti] does not assert even conventionally the partless apprehenders and apprehended objects that are imputed by the uncommon tenets of those schools.

#### चले,चमु,चरु,पंग्रेज,च,जम्,जीर्।

10

15

25

Chandrakīrti's Commentary on (Āryadeva's) "Four Hundred" says:32

# त्ते'त्रम्'य'क्षर'रदम्'में'श्रे'य'क्षस्याग्रीकाङ्काग्रीक्ष्यात्र्यस्य रवामकान्त्रद्वरप्यरक्षे रेगकार्क्षा

For our own [Buddhist] schools to assert substantially established minute particles as do the Vaiśeśikas is unsuitable.

#### बेबार्याकः भेरावबासी मुद्दाराय राष्ट्राह्म की

Thus [Chandrakīrti] says that he does not assert partless particles.

# भ्रेपायाक्षेत्राग्चीत्रार्देव प्राप्त (१८६५ प्राप्त स्वासा (६२३) प्राप्त सामा स्वासा स्वासा

That the Mādhyamikas do not assert conventionally what the two schools—[Vaibhāśika and Sautrāntika]—assert as ultimates refers to things that are partless and so forth.

# 

This does not indicate that whatever those two assert as true the Mādhyamikas do not assert conventionally, for although [the Vaibhāśikas and Sautrāntikas] assert forms, sounds, and so forth to be true [which the Mādhyamikas do not accept], the Mādhyamikas do assert these conventionally.

### चलि'चक्कु'चति'त्रोल'च'त्रका द्वर'चॅते'स्व'ख'स्व'कॅन्ब'चते'ङ्ग्रवक'ग्री'से'से'क्ब'द्वर'वेब'ग्री'क्कुस'तर्देद'च'चगाना'डेर'

In the *Commentary on (Āryadeva's) "Four Hundred"*, <sup>33</sup> [Chandrakīrti] refutes the assertion that each [minute particle] on the occasion of a collection of minute particles of a sense power is a cause of a sense consciousness.

This is commentary on XIV.18.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>33</sup> See for instance P5266, vol. 98, 259.2.5-259.2.8.

20

25

#### 

Also, he does not establish the sense powers as being just those minute particles or as other than them. Thus, that which is designated in dependence on those [minute particles] is the basis of the consciousnesses.

### दे'चबैद'रु'सुयाद्मस्रस्यायुद्यचहेद'द्रस्याचहम्स्यायदे'चहम्स्यार्थेद'र्चटरनेस्यायीःस्यारु'म्स्रुटसंवेदा

Similarly, with regard to the objects [of the sense consciousnesses], he says that imputed existents that are dependently designated are the objects of sense consciousnesses, and...

### नेबायाद्मस्यासार्वेदासुसायात्रम्बादायायाद्मस्याद्मस्यास्याद्मस्यास्याद्मस्यास्याद्मस्यास्याद्मस्यास्याद्मस्या

...he asserts that consciousnesses are designated pratyaksa and objects are fully qualified pratyaksa.

# र्श्वेतः द्वेतः वदेः दद्श्वेतः द्वेतः येण्याः व्यवः वद्वेदः ण्वेश्वः व्यवः द्वेतः प्वेतः प्वतः व्यवः व

Therefore, although this master [Chandrakīrti] and the master Bhāvaviveka are similar in asserting external objects, it appears that they differ in how they posit the sense powers and objects.

# श्चरः प्रतरः भेश्चरः मेश्चर्यः प्रश्चा । स्वरः प्रत्येषा यदे स्वरः प्रत्येषा यदे स्वरः प्रत्येषा स्वरः प्रत्ये स्वरः स्वरः स्वरः स्वरं स्वरः स्वरः

Earlier, at the time of refuting that the sense consciousnesses are valid cognitions with regard to [objects' establishment by way of] their own character, [Chandrakīrti] said [in the *Bodhisattvayogācāracatuḥśatakaṭɪkā* that objects are deceptive] "because of being something that abides in one way but appears in another..." (see above, p.4).

Therefore, forms, sounds, and so forth **appear** to sense consciousnesses to be established by way of their own character. But, since this own character does not exist even conventionally as it appears, this master [Chandrakīrti] asserts that even conventionally these [sense consciousnesses] are **mistaken**.

Nonetheless, it is not incorrect that sense consciousnesses be valid cognitions that posit objects such as forms, sounds, and so forth conventionally.

## दे द्वस्य त्व्यायमार्थे मृत्यते क्वास्य विष्या स्वर्षेत्र क्वास्य क्वा

The reason why those [sense consciousnesses] are posited as mistaken is that an object which is established by way of its own character as appears [to them] does not exist.

### रदायबेतः र्षेत् सोत् पर्येत् पर्येत् सेवाश्वायदे भेशायश्वाय्य प्रवित् श्री। श्रःश्रूत् पर्यः स्वत् सामान्त्र शेष्य्युयायश

This is established by a reasoning consciousness analyzing whether or not things exist inherently; it is not at all established by conventional valid cognition.

### चः सूर् यदे विश्वयाया स्रेंश हे त्युवाया सामित हैं।

10

Therefore, in terms of conventional consciousnesses, they are **not mistaken**.

# ञ्च'य'गिकैस'श्वर'प्रस्मञ्ज्ञ । य'र्सेग्राय'श्वर'प्रदेशेश'[624]य'ते श्वर'य'क्ष्रस'ग्ची'र्नेत'ञ्च'य'गिकैस'प्रप्य सेंग्राय'ये,प्रस्मान्त्रम्य । यहेन्योत्तर्भ्य । यहेन्योत्तर्भय । विविधाय'य'क्ष्रिस'ये,प्रस्माने ।

With regard to consciousnesses perceiving two moons, reflections, and so forth, those objects as they appear—two moons, the reflected face, and so forth—are established as not existing by conventional valid cognition itself without relying on a reasoning consciousness.

### दे'द्वा'द्दःश्चःस्राम्मस्याःष्यःप्यःषदःद्वा'ददःर्येवा'यदे'त्युतःर्ह्वेचःग्री'म्मसःद्वे'ष्यदःदवदःयःष्येवःर्वे। ।

Thus, the distinction of real and unreal conventionalities with regard to [conventional valid cognitions] and these [mistaken sense consciousnesses] is correct.

### याता. के. मृत्याचारात्रः के बादा नदान क्षुन्य प्रते क्षन्य त्या प्रते व बाद्य व बादा व व व व व व व व व व व व व

*Qualm:* One might allow that there is this difference of whether [a consciousness] is realized **as mistaken** in dependence upon a reasoning consciousness or conventional valid cognition.

### 20 वुन् प्रतिवर्ण सँग्रायमञ्चरप्रते र्देव सेन्या सूर्य स्थान स्यान स्थान स्थान

However, just as objects that appear to be a face and so forth do not exist, so also objects that appear to be [established by way] of their own character do not exist;

25 ...and, just as forms and so forth that are empty of own character exist, so also reflections and so forth that are empty of being a face exist.

#### देवे ख्रीरदेदमाया व स्नुद्राय वे र्स्ने स्टादमाव या या वे सावसा ग्राम् ख्रीत के विमास विमास मित्र प्राप्त स्नु

Therefore, between these two, there is no difference of erroneousness or non-erroneousness in terms of an ordinary conventional awareness.

### 

[Answer:] Indeed, both entities that are established by way of their own character and objects such as reflected faces as they appear are similar in not existing conventionally.

#### याञ्चयाश्चर्याञ्चर्यस्ययस्य

Also, both forms and so forth and reflections and so forth are similar in existing conventionally.

#### दह्यादम्याया

15

20

However, Chandrakīrti's [Auto]commentary on the Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way" says:<sup>34</sup>

# ब्रूटःया चहेत्रत्वश्वर्यम्बर्गस्यः वहेत्। चहेत्रत्यः वहेत्। चहेत्। चहेत्

Some dependently-arisen things such as reflections, echoes, and so forth are false and appear [to be false] to the ignorant.

#### ऀॾॕॖॺॱय़ॕॱॴॱऄ॔ॺऻॺॱय़ॱॺऻॿॖॺऻॺॱॸ॒ॸॱऄ॓॔॔॔॔॔॔॔॔ऄॳॴॸॖॸॱऄॕ॔॔॔॔॔ॸय़ॱॴॱऄ॔॔॔॔ॺऻॺॱय़ॱढ़ॖॸॱॿॸॱऄऀॺॱॺऀॱय़ॸ॓ऀढ़ॱय़ॸॱॿॣॸॱॿॢऻ

Some things like forms, such as blue and so forth, minds, feelings, and so forth appear to be true.

### र्राचित्रते संस्वायान्यः वृत्यः स्वायान्त्रस्यायः स्वायः स्वायः स्वायः स्वायः स्वायः स्वायः स्वायः स्वायः स्वाय

The [final] nature [of things, that is, emptiness] does not appear in any way to those who are ignorant.

## *देवे:ब्रेस-दे:द्रस्याद:बेया:गुद:ॾॅ्य:हु:ब्यद्यम्हुद:य:वे:गुद:ॾॅ्य:ग्रु:वदेव:य:ब्यब्यंव*:वॅ()

Therefore, that [nature, i.e., emptiness] and whatever are false even conventionally are not conventional truths [that is, truths for a worldly conventional consciousness].

This is commentary on VI.28.

# बेश्चर्यन्याः व्यव्यक्तित्त्राच्यत्त्रेष्ट्वाचित्रेष्ट्वाचित्रेष्ट्वाचित्रः व्यव्यक्ष्यः व्यव्यक्ष्यः व्यव्यक्ष विश्वर्ष्ट्वाचित्रः व्यव्यक्षः विश्वर्ष्यः विश्वर्ष्यः विश्वर्षः विश्वर्षः विश्वर्षः विश्वर्षः विश्वर्षः विश्व

Should someone says that this difference [set forth by Chandrakīrti] in which blue and so forth are posited as conventional truths and reflections and so forth are not posited as conventional truths is not correct, what answer would one have?

5

10

20

25

# दे'माक्षेत्र'मा' शक्षुद्र'प्यते' भेत्राय' त्याञ्चर'य स्वर्याय स्वर्याय मुत्राय स्वर्याय स्वयं स्वर्याय स्वयं स

I think [the following]: Although both of those are similar in appearing to conventional consciousnesses, since reflections and so forth are realized to be false by a worldly consciousness itself, they are not posited as truths for the world, that is, for a conventional [consciousness].

# क्रॅब'र्य'त्य'र्सेग्राय'त्रे'यह्रुव'य'षेव'गुर'रे'यह्रुव'[625]यर'तहेग'हेव'यते'वेश'यश'र्वर'त्रुदु'यर'भ्रे'तुश'यश'तहेग'हेव'गुव' क्रॅब'ग्री'यरेव'यर'तहेंग'र्गे'श्रुभ'व।

However, blue and so forth, even though they are falsities, cannot be understood to be falsities by a worldly consciousness; hence, they are posited as truths for the world, that is, for a conventional [consciousness].

# 15 दे स्वराध्यादे मिक्रियाया श्रिदाया या स्वराधित है सामा या स्वराधित स्वराधित स्वराधाय स्वराधित स्वराधाय स्वर

Moreover, just as [a difference of] truth and falsity in this way in terms of conventional consciousnesses is feasible with regard to these two objects, so too [a difference of] erroneousness and non-erroneousness in terms of a conventional consciousness is feasible with regard to the two subjects [that is, between the consciousnesses perceiving forms and so forth and those perceiving reflections and so forth].

#### ग्याने' च ऋत्यते ते द्वाया या वेंद्वाने खेत के आयेंग्याय येत त्वा ऋत्त त्या व्याया प्राप्त त्याया वेंद्वाया व

*Qualm:* If [a sense consciousness] is non-erroneous in terms of a conventional consciousness, this contradicts [the position that sense consciousnesses] are mistaken conventionally.

# चःश्रु५-५-१त्वुत्यायतेःत्वुत्यास्रतेः चःश्रु५-५८-वेद्यायायादात्यार्वेद्यात्रसाद्वीत्र-केः सार्वेषायायायात्रः व चःश्रु५-५-१त्वुत्यायतेः त्वुत्यास्रतेः चःश्रु५-५८-वेद्यायायादात्यार्वेद्यात्रसाद्वीतः केः सार्वेषायायायात्रस्य

[Answer.] If the two, the conventionality that is the perspective of error for something being mistaken conventionally and the conventional consciousness in terms of which something is posited as non-erroneous, were the same, there would be a contradiction.

#### चः सूर दे मित्रे सं ते र्से र्से या प्येत प्यक्ष है विमायमा

However, since these two "conventionalities" are distinct, what contradiction is there?

This is as follows: Since the reasoned refutation of an inherent existence, that is, of an establishment by way of their own entities, of forms and so forth, is not suitable to be done ultimately,<sup>35</sup> it must be done conventionally.

### दे'तर्'वते'च'ऋद'यते'नेब'र्दे'देर'ने'द्वर'यति'नेब'य'द्वअब'त्वूल'व'षीन'ल।

For such a conventional consciousness, the sense consciousnesses are mistaken.

### 10 दे'अश्वान्तव्रापते'चश्चर्रापते'वेश्वापार्राप्तवार्यात्र्यस्य सामीवेर्यात्राच्यात्राच्यात्राचित्रप्रसामीवित्रप्रसामीवित्रप्तर्याची

However, for ordinary conventional consciousnesses which are other than those, [the sense consciousnesses] are not mistaken. Hence, there is no contradiction.

For example, it is like the worldly convention, "Some are here; some are not here," in which the term "some" is the same, but the some who are here and the some who are not here are not posited as being the same objects.

So also the "non-mistakenness" [of the sense consciousnesses] is posited in terms of an ordinary worldly consciousness; Mādhyamikas do not assert them to be non-mistaken.

### वहिषा हेत कि प्राचारित धीता विकार्सिष का मासुरका या सूर में।

It is like the statement [by Chandrakīrti], "These are true just for the world." 36

Therefore, the Mādhyamikas posit them as false. Nonetheless, there is no contradiction in [the sense consciousnesses] positing false objects.

20

25

Page 132 of 230

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>35</sup> Because nothing can be done ultimately in this system which refutes ultimate existence.

This passage from Chandrakīrti's *Madhyamakāvatāra*, VI.25, was cited above, p.8

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>37</sup> (gtso bo, pradhāna)

#### स्यायदेव या तर्हे मात्र वे स्याय वता त्र्याय वा तर्हे माय मात्र दे प्राय माया विवासी ।

[Rather], if a true object were posited, it would be contradictory to assert that it was posited by a mistaken subject.

# 

Because, conventionally, all phenomena are asserted to be like a magician's illusions, they are false conventionally.

#### गुवः हैं यायदेवायमायहें मायदम् सी तमायाहे।

10

15

20

However, it is not contradictory to posit them as conventional truths [or truths for a concealer] (samvrtisatya).

# अ'र्रेण'र्र्र्यवित्र श्चीय'र्युत्र र्ह्स्य श्रेष्ठी । विश्वाणश्चरश्चायदेश्चर्ययेत्र स्वायतेत्र स्वायतेत्र स्वाय वी'र्रेट्स्य श्चायाय वर्षेत्र स्वायाय स्वायते स्वायते स्वायते स्वायते स्वायते स्वायाय स्वायाय स्वायाय स्वायाय

For [Chandrakīrti's Madhyamakāvatāra (Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way", VI.28a)] says, "Because ignorance obstructs the nature [of phenomena] it is [called a] 'concealer' (saṃvṛti)." Hence there is no contradiction in something being true for that conventionality/concealer (saṃvṛti) which is ignorance and false for that conventional consciousness (saṃvṛti) in terms of which the refutation of an establishment by way of their own entities in phenomena is posited.

### ग्वार्क्च न्त्राप्त न्त्राच नित्राच नि

The statement [in Chandrakīrti's *Madhaymakāvatārabhāṣya* ([Auto]commentary on the Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way")], "...whatever are false even conventionally are not conventional truths," is to be taken as their being realized as false by conventional valid cognition.

### ब**ॱॠ**ॖॖॖॸॱॸॣॖॱॸॱख़ऀढ़ॱय़ॱख़॔॔ॺॱॴॖॸॖॸॱऄऀॱॸॖड़ॱऀॸ॔ॱॗ

It is not suitable to be taken merely as their being false conventionally.

#### [Chapter 10. Conventional Existence]

देःस्वराद्याः अत्याद्याः स्वर् स्वराद्याः स्वर् स्वर्

In this way, the Mādhyamikas within their own system posit many presentations of cyclic existence and nirvāṇa conventionally and also refute the conventional existence of the objects imputed by the uncommon assertions of the proponents of [true] existence.

र्द्ध्यायदीः द्रमाः वित्रः तृत्रमायः यसायदेवः यामाकृषाः ग्रीः इसायमः यवमायाः श्वीवः द्वीः सार्यमायमः मृत्रायाः श्वीदः सबमः श्वयः दिः ।

Since this is very difficult to do, a non-erroneous realization of the presentation of the truths is almost non-existent.

[The erroneous view] is as follows: When one refutes the conventional existence of those things asserted by the proponents of [true] existence, it must be done through reasoned analysis.

Also, with regard to one's own assertion of the existence of production, cessation, and so forth conventionally, the assertion or non-assertion of such by the discriminative is done in terms of whether or not there exist proofs, and...

दे'षदःदेग्रबायदे'हेबाबुदवदबायायार्थेह्बार्बे

5

that in turn depends upon a sequence of reasoning.

20 क्रुसः दबः देग्बायसः न्धुन्यः दः दः ग्रीसः । वर्षः स्वादः सुन्दः स्वादः सुन्दः स्वादः सुन्दः स्वादः स्वतः स्वादः स्वत

Thinking the above, some feel that, when analyzed with reasoning, the conventionalities that would be asserted by oneself and those objects imputed by the proponents of [true] existence are, if discredited by reasoning, equally discredited, and, if not discredited, equally not discredited.

Thus, if one asserts that Iśvara, the Principal<sup>37</sup>, and so forth do not exist conventionally, one must also assert that forms and so forth do not exist conventionally, and if those [forms] do exist conventionally, one must also assert Iśvara and so forth to exist. They see those two as equivalent.

They hold that it is unsuitable in one's own system to identify or assert with regard to any phenomenon, "This is such and such; this is not such and such," and claim with this to have found the Mādhyamika reality.

10 दे. त्र. प्रते. व्या क्षे. क्षे. क्षे. क्षे. क्षे. क्षे. क्षे. क्षे. त्र क्षे. त्र क्षे. त्र क्षे. त्र क्षे. व्या क्ष

Further, in accordance with such understanding, they hold that setting [the mind] without apprehending anything at all is cultivation of the meaning of the pure [Mādhyamika] view. There appear to be a great many who assert such.

Such things do not appear to be talk pleasing the wise.

For, not identifying the object to be negated by reasoning as explained before, [those who propound such] destroy with the reasoning refuting inherent existence all presentations of conventionalities.

षदः द्वाः यदेः क्षुः यः ददः व्यवाः यदेः क्षुः यः इत्रम्भवः वर्षे रः यदे क्षेत्रः यदे क्षेत्रः यदेः क्षेत्रः यदे यदेः क्षेत्रः स्वाः यदेः क्षुः यः द्वम्यक्षः वर्षे रः यदे वर्षे रः यदे क्षेत्रः यदेः क्षेत्रः यदेः क्षेत्रः यदे

Thus, this is a greatly erroneous view in which the correct view and the wrong view are, if mistaken, equally mistaken, and, if non-mistaken, equally non-mistaken.

-

20

5

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>37</sup> (gtso bo, pradhāna)

Therefore, even though one might familiarize with such [a view] for a long time, not only does one not come the least bit closer to the correct view, in fact, one moves farther away from it, for [such a wrong view] is very contradictory with the path of dependent-arising in which all the presentations of the dependent-arisings of cyclic existence and nirvāṇa are suitable within one's own system.

#### देवे क्षेत्र द्वा या व्यवस्य विश्व

5

10

15

20

Therefore, Chandrakīrti's *Madhyamakāvatāra* (Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way", VI.26) says:

श्चेश्वाकित्यीश्चान्यायञ्चित्यस्त्रीत्स्राञ्चेत्वास्त्रा । ह्यास्त्रीयायत्याः कृत्दे त्याक्षेत्रः यात्रम् श्चायः प्रदा । ह्यासञ्चीयाः कुर्स्यास्यायात्रम् स्वायः यादा । दे त्याः द्वियाः हेत्यस्य यादः स्वितः स्वेतः कित्। ।

The self as it is imagined by the non-Buddhist [philosophers],

Disturbed by the sleep of ignorance,

And those things imputed to mirages,

Magicians' illusions, and so forth, do not exist even for the world.

देश्रासुश्रेषाश्चायते तर्दे द्राया द्युत्र स्थाय त्राया द्युत्र स्थाय त्राया द्युत्र स्थाय द्युत्र स्थाय द्युत् स्थाय स्याय स्थाय स्याय स्थाय स्थाय

Thus [Chandrakīrti] says that those things imputed by the uncommon assertions of the non-Buddhist [philosophers] and, as cited earlier, by the uncommon assertions of the proponents of [true] existence among our own schools do not exist even conventionally in [the Mādhyamika's] own system. I will explain the meaning of this.

25 देः वाश्वरङ्ग्वर्त्तुः विद्याया विद्याय विद्याय

Someone might wonder, "From what point of view is the assertion of one thing as existing conventionally and another as not existing posited?"

# चःश्रुद्दायदेःवेश्वायायाम् वात्रश्चायाचेत्रायाद्वत् देश्वयाम् वात्रायदेः देत्रादेश्याचात्रे द्वात्रायदे विश्वय वाश्रुद्दायदेःवेश्वायायाम् वात्रश्चायाचेत्रायादेत् देश्वयाम् विश्वयायदे देत्रादेश्वयाच्यायदे देश्वयायदे विश्वय

[Answer]: That which (1) is renowned to a conventional consciousness; (2) with regard to which the object, as it is renowned, is not discredited by another consciousness which is a conventional valid cognition, and (3) on which there is no descent of discredit by the reasoning properly analyzing reality, that is, analyzing whether there is inherent existence or not, is asserted to exist conventionally.

#### दे'द्रषा'यश्रक्षेषा'य'वे'श्रेद्र'यर'वर्देद'र्दे।

5

15

That which is opposite from those is asserted not to exist.

### दे'त्य'च'श्रूद'यते'वेश्व'य'वे'र्केश्च'याद्यत्यद्य'हे'ख़्द्र'श्रूद'य'ख़्द्र'श्ची'हेश'शु'तह्या'य'र्उअ'णेव'श्ची।

With regard to this, "conventional consciousnesses" operate within non-investigation, being consciousnesses that merely operate within the context of how whatsoever phenomenon appears to them;

# 

they do not analyze thinking, "Is this object that appears just an appearance in that way to the mind, or is the object's mode of being established in that way?"

#### 

They are called non-analytical consciousnesses, but it is not the case that they are utterly non-investigative.

They operate within the context of how things appear, or are renowned, to worldly, or conventional, consciousness and do not operate within analyzing what the nature of things is.<sup>38</sup> Therefore, they are called "worldly renown".

# यद्रायाद्वीः श्रेश्वायाद्वीः श्रुवायाव्यश्चित्रायाः स्त्रुवायाव्यस्य विष्णायाः स्त्रित्यस्य स्त्रित्यस्य स्त्र यद्रयायाद्वीः स्त्रित्यायाद्वीः श्रुवायाव्यस्य स्त्रित्यस्य स्त्रित्यस्य स्त्रित्यस्य स्त्रित्यस्य स्त्रित्यस्य

Since such consciousnesses occur in all [persons]—those who are and are not involved with tenets—they are called "worldly renown" or "non-analytical consciousnesses" no matter what sort of [person's] continuum they occur in.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>38</sup> CP: Napper uses "nature of things" in this section for *yin lugs*.

10

15

20

25

### शुवासवसार्भ्याः सामक्ष्याया वित्रात्ते वार्षात्रे वित्रात्ते वित्र

One should not hold that they exist only in the continuums of those worldly persons whose minds have not been affected by tenets.

# 

Although in the continuums of those whose minds have been affected by tenets, there are many awarenesses analyzing whether something is as it is renowned conventionally or whether it abides that way in reality, how could it be that **all** their consciousnesses must be consciousnesses analyzing what the nature of things is?

Therefore, with regard to what worldly renown is like, it is not a matter of asking only old worldly persons who are devoid of tenets; it is sufficient to view the mode of operation of non-analytical minds in the continuums of parties in a debate.

Those things that are renowned to those consciousnesses are bases for the designation of conventions of [that is, based on] appearance and experience.

Even with regard to the effects of actions, the levels and paths, and so forth, which are not renowned to ordinary persons, since when they are taken as objects [of the mind] through hearing about or experiencing them, they appear even to ordinary consciousnesses that are not analyzing what the nature of things is, there is no fallacy that they are not [objects of] worldly renown.

With regard to discredit by another [consciousness which is a] conventional valid cognition, there is an example:

Even though when one conceives with regard to a rope, "This is a snake," or with regard to a mirage, "This is water," these are apprehended by an awareness that is not analyzing what the nature of things is, since the objects apprehended by those [consciousnesses] are discredited by conventional valid cognition, they do not exist even conventionally.

5

30

र्दायित्रार्थे न्या स्थापित्र स्थाप्त वित्र त्रुप्त स्थापित्र स्यापित्र स्थापित्र स्य

With regard to the non-descent of discredit by a reasoning consciousness properly analyzing whether something inherently exists or not, although objects posited conventionally must be established by conventional valid cognition, they must also definitely not be discredited in any way by a reasoning consciousness properly analyzing whether they inherently exist or not.

देग्रबायादेबाळॅदायरामुयादादेवार्याच्याचार्येदायरामुयायायीदायबादाङ्ग्रदायरामुयायराम्बादाया

However, since whatever is established as existing by such reasoning is established as existing by way of is own entity, it is contradictory that [such] be a conventional object.

देवि:श्वीर-देवाश्चान्त्रेश्चीश्वाश्चीश्वाश्चान्त्रेत्राच्यान्त्र्यान्त्र्यान्त्र्यान्त्र्यान्त्र्यान्त्र्यान्त् द्यदःश्विष्णान्दःवार्डःविःत्यश्चान्तेःश्च्याःवश्चिदःयःवादेश्वायेवःश्ववःश्ववःश्ववःश्ववःश्ववःश्ववःत्रःविःविःविःव श्वितःश्वीर-देवाश्चान्त्रःविश्वायेवः श्विषःविश्वायेवः विश्वायेवः श्विषः श्ववः श्विषः श्ववः श्विषः श्विषः श्वीय श्वितः श्वीयः श्वीयः श्वीयः श्वीयः श्वीयः विश्वायः विश्वायः विश्वयः श्वीयः श्वीय

- Therefore, there is no place for the wrong idea that, holding the two—not being discredited by a reasoning consciousness and being established by that [reasoning consciousness]—to be the same, conceives that if pleasure and pain arise conventionally from virtue and non-virtue, then it would equally be the case that pleasure and pain would arise from Iśvara and the Principal, and if the first is not the case, then the second is equally not so.

This is because although the two—the production of pleasure and pain by Iśvara and the Principal and the production of pleasure and pain by virtues and non-virtues—are equally not established by a reasoning analyzing properly whether they inherently exist or not, they are not alike in all respects, in that one is and one is not discredited by reasoning.

10

25

30

देश्यः प्रदान्त्वतः श्रीः श्रेष्यः प्रदेशः देशः स्त्रात्त्र स्त्र स्त्

With regard to this, when those things such as partless objects and subjects, self, the Principal, and Iśvara that are imputed by the uncommon assertions of the proponents of [true] existence among our own and others' schools are posited by them, they are posited upon analysis with reasoning as to whether such things are or are not established by way of their own entities and within the thought that those objects are found by reasoning analyzing in that way.

देःदर्देः त्यः स्टायत्वेदः स्विदः स्विदः स्विदः स्विदः स्विदः याम्बदः स्विदः याम्बदः स्विदः स्विदः स्विदः स्वि द्वादः स्विदः स्विद

Therefore, they must assert that such is done by others' reasoned analysis analyzing whether those inherently exist or not because they assert that those objects are able to bear reasoned analysis.

देःक्ष्रस्त्युत्यक्षःस्यक्षःस्यदेःस्राधेत्यदेग्वह्रणायदेःत्वस्यव्यक्षःत्यक्षःत्यक्षःत्रेत्वास्यक्षःस्राह्णेत्य दे। देःत्रणार्षेत्रवस्यक्षःस्यदेःत्रणाणीक्षःह्णेत्रःत्रविक्षःस्यदेःख्वेत्रःस्। ।

When analyzed in this way, they are unable to bear the burden of investigation by stainless reasoning, whereby, upon not being found by that reasoning, they are refuted, for if they did exist, they would have to be found by those reasonings.

या [630] र्स्या भीत्र मित्र मित्र मित्र प्रति स्थाय सित्र सित्र प्रति सित्र सित्र प्रति सित्र स

Forms, sound, and so forth are only posited in accordance with how they are renowned to conventional consciousnesses that are not discredited by internal and external causes of error.

They are not asserted in the context of a system of inherent existence, that is, one in which, having been analyzed by way of the thought, "Are these mere conventions, or are they established in terms of an objective mode of being?", they are found by such analysis to be established by way of their own entities.

दे'द्रम्'त्यः स्टायबीतः व्यादः स्रोदः द्रीद्वाद्यः देशस्य यदे द्रीद्वाद्यः यद्य स्थाद्यः द्रीत् द्रीतः द्रीतः व स्रोद्यात्रः ।

Therefore, reasoned analysis analyzing whether or not these inherently exist is not applicable, for we do not assert that these objects are able to bear reasoned analysis.

### न्येन्त्र। दर्ने'ख्या'णेव'र्वे'बे**बाब्रुब**'य'व'र्दे'व'ह'णेव'व्यात्रुद्व'यं'णेव'बे**ब**'न्युंन'तु'शे'र्द्रप्य'न्द्र'य'णेव'र्वे।।

It is like, for example, the way in which, upon being told, "This is a sheep," it is unsuitable to analyze, "Is this a horse or is it an elephant?"

दहेगाहेत त वेंगा आसे द्या त्र श्राणा न श्राण त्र श्री त स्था त्र श्री द्वा स्था त्र श्री द्वा स्था त्र श्री दे त स्था त स्

With regard to things that although renowned in the world from beginningless time do not exist even conventionally due to their being discredited by reasoning, these are such things as the objects of the imputation by ignorance of an own entity in things, the objects of the conception by the view of the perishing collection of an I and mine that are established by way of their own entities, and the objects of the conception that yesterday's mountain is today's mountain.

### 

Therefore, it is not the case that the Mādhyamikas assert conventionally whatever is renowned in the world.

When some propound that the reason for the dissimilarity between forms, sounds, and so forth and the imputations of the non-Buddhist [philosophers] in terms of whether they do or do not exist conventionally is the fact that the former [sounds and so forth] are renowned to all the world whereas the latter [Iśvara, the Principal, and so forth] are renowned to only propounders of tenets, they have not differentiated well.

20 ग्राब्द पुत्र व श्रुद पुत्र मह्म व श्रुव श्रूव श्र

Otherwise, there would be many [unwanted entailments] such as that forms and so forth being illusion-like would not exist conventionally and that their being established by way of their own entities would exist conventionally.

#### 25 रेग्रायापुर्वासुप्रितरेत्वोवायावसाग्राम्।

10

15

Also, Chandrakīrti's Yuktiṣaṣṭikāvṛtti, Commentary on (Nāgārjuna's) "Sixty Stanzas of Reasoning says: 39

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>39</sup> This is commentary on 7b.

10

# देः धदान्त्रेत देः विवादि स्वादा के दार् के दार् दिवादा वादा के वादा

The erroneous are those things that are apprehended as being just blissful and so forth, because even conventionally those things do not abide as having that nature.

The non-erroneous are those things apprehended as just suffering and so forth because those things have such a nature conventionally.

Thus, [Chandrakīrti] explains that even though the four, permanence and so forth, are renowned in common to the world, the conception of them is erroneous conventionally.<sup>40</sup>

#### बी'ह्रम्'र्सेम्**राप्तवे'र्ये'**यहेम्'हेर्युत्रत्यास्याम्माम्राण्यरादेरायहेत्र्याद्वेत्राचे सार्येमायराम्रास्त्रास्या

And, even though the four, impermanence and so forth, are not renowned to all the world, the conception of them is non-erroneous.

# 15 दे.क्षेत्रःसिन्त्रःश्चाःश्चर्याश्चर्यात्रःस्यान्त्रःसित्तःत्रःस्यान्त्रःश्चरःसित्तःस्यान्त्रःस्यान्तःस्यान्त्रःस्यान्त्रःस्यान्त्रःस्यान्त्रःस्यान्त्रःस्यान्त्रःस्यान्त्रःस्यान्तःस्यान्त्रःस्यान्तःस्यान्त्रःस्यान्तःस्यान्त्रःस्यान्तःस्यान्तःस्यान्तःस्यान्तःस्यान्तःस्यान्तःस्यान्तःस्यान्तःस्यान्तःस्यान्त्रःस्यान्तःस्य

Hence, a conceptual consciousness apprehending the aggregates to be impermanent and so forth, even though it is mistaken with regard to its appearing object, is said to be non-erroneous, or non-mistaken, because the mode of apprehension of its ascertainment factor is not discredited by valid cognition.

#### 

However, sense consciousnesses are mistaken with regard to their appearing objects and are not said to be non-mistaken because they do not have any other factor which is without error.

#### 

[All] sense consciousnesses are similar in being mistaken with regard to what appears.

This refers to the misconception that impermanent phenomena which in fact have a nature of suffering are permanent, blissful, pure, and having self.

However, in terms of whether an object concordant with what appears to the world exists or not, sense consciousnesses such as those to which a reflection appears [as a face] are incorrect conventionalities, and non-defective sense consciousnesses that are other than those are correct conventionalities.

### खुट चें हुन पारा वार्श्वन कार्य र तहें ताय ते हिंगाय ते तहें ता सूर का ग्री खुवा ते वा सूर हुन ता कार वर्षे नाय र तहें ता या र तहें वा स्वर्ध का ग्री खुवा ते वा सूर हुन हुन स्वर्ध का सूर

Since the objects of the mode of apprehension of conceptual consciousnesses apprehending the aggregates to be permanent and so forth do not exist conventionally, they can be refuted.

### 

5

15

20

25

However, since the objects of the conception [of them] as impermanent and so forth do exist conventionally, they cannot be refuted by reasoning.

#### 

Just as the four, permanence and so forth, that are established ultimately, or are established by way of their own entities, do not exist, so also the four, impermanence and so forth, that are established in those two ways [i.e., ultimately, or by way of their own entities] do not exist.

# 

Thinking of this, [Buddha, in the Perfection of Wisdom sūtras] said that meditating upon forms as permanent or impermanent, blissful or painful, having self or not having self is meditation on signs.

# 

Qualm: It is contradictory to overcome with reasoning the mode of apprehension of the ignorance that superimposes inherent existence on things and not to refute conventional objects because Chandrakīrti's Madhyamakāvatāra (Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way", VI.28) says: 41

La Vallée Poussin edition, 107.1-3.

10

15

20

याहिःस्याः स्टायत्वेतः स्त्रीयः ख्रीसः यात्वः स्त्री । देशः याद्यादेशः सः याद्वेतः यासः श्रूदः देशे । यातः स्त्रियः यादेतः विश्वास्यः देशः यास्यः स्त्रीः ।

The Sage said that because ignorance obscures the nature [of phenomena] it is a "concealer" (samvrti).

Those fabrications which it perceives as true Are called "truths-for-a-concealer" (*samvrtisatya*).

### बेश्राम्बम्भाञ्च र्श्वम्भाञ्च स्वाधार्यः देवायिः द्वर्याचेश्वस्य स्वाधार्यः विश्वस्य स्वाधार्यः स्वाधारः स्वाधार्यः स्वाधारः स्वाधारः

Thus [Chandrakīrti] says that forms, sounds, and so forth are posited as conventional truths [or truths for a concealer] through the force of ignorance.

### क्केंब्र सेन्द्री मञ्ज्यक्ष क्षुक्षिम्करम् वर्षे वर्ष वर्षे वर्षे

[Answer]: There is no fallacy. "Truth" in the context of forms, sounds, and so forth being posited as truths for a concealer [or conventional truths] means that they are true through the force of a [particular] thought.

### यश्रमायाने वारामित वार

Since that thought must be taken as a conception of true existence, they [forms, sounds, and so forth] are truths for the ignorance that superimposes inherent existence [on them].

Therefore, for the two Arhats who have abandoned afflicted ignorance and for Bodhisattvas on the eighth level and above, Chandrakīrti said, "these appearances are [seen] as having natures that are fabricated and not as true because they do not exagerate [phenomena] as true."

#### वेशायनेवायदेवासेनायाम्सस्यायागुवाहेंयाउसानुगासुरस्याययामुगसस्य स्वावी

This is the reason why [Chandrakīrti] said that for those who do not have the conception of true existence, [forms and so forth] are "mere conventionalities" [i.e., not conventional *truths*].

Most of this paragraph is a paraphrase of Chandrakīrti's commentary on VI.28. The phrase in quotation marks is a direct quote. See La Vallée Poussin's edition 108.2-3 and ff. The mention of the phrase "mere conventionalities" that he is about to explain is found at 108.5-6.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>43</sup> P5262, vol.98, 103.5.7. La Vallée Poussin's edition of the Tibetan, 228.1-4.

## देवे ख्री मान्या का क्षु केंग्राचित यादेव यादे सम्मायवे दिमाधित गुमान वात्राक्ष क्षु केंग्राक्ष सम्माय देवाय की का की

Therefore, although the truth of forms, sounds, and so forth is for ignorance, forms, sounds, and so forth are not posited by that ignorance.

# 

5

20

25

It is like the way in which, for example, even though, for a wrong consciousness apprehending a snake with regard to a rope, the rope is a snake, that wrong consciousness does not posit the rope.

The awarenesses that posit forms, sounds, and so forth are the six non-defective consciousnesses—eye and so forth. Therefore, the objects established by them exist conventionally whereby they are not refuted by reasoning.

However, in the manner in which they are apprehended by ignorance, they do not exist even conventionally because this is a superimposition of inherent existence, that is, an establishment by way of their own entities, on things, and such inherent existence does not exist even conventionally.

# देते<sup>.</sup> क्षेत्र-देवाबायसाग्रादान्त्रकृत्तुत्व्वीवाश्चेत्वदे देवाबायसासावेवाबादान्त्रकृत्तुत्त्रकृत्याद्वात्त्रम् ।

Therefore, [forms and so forth as they are apprehended by ignorance] are refuted even conventionally by reasoning; if they were not refuted, then conventionally things would not be established as like magicians' illusions.

Having superimposed features of attractiveness, unattractiveness and so forth to an inherent existence superimposed by ignorance, then desire, hatred, and so forth are generated. Thus the mode of apprehension of these also can be overcome by reasoning.

### देःसूरःषदः। चलिःचक्कुःचवेःवर्षेवःयःवस्

Chandrakīrti's Commentary on (Āryadeva's) "Four Hundred" says [in commentary on VI.10]

यंत्यः र्श्वेष्वश्चार्यः वित्रः यः प्राण्यः वित्रः वित्रः वित्रः वित्रः वित्रः वित्रः वित्रः वित्रः वित्रः वित यात्यः र्श्वेष्वश्चार्यः वित्रः यः वित्रः वित्र

Desire and so forth engage in superimposing features of attractiveness, unattractiveness, and so forth to just an inherent existence of things that is superimposed by ignorance.

ष्रिः सुषा त्यश्चाः स्रो प्रप्रात्य प्रत्या प्रस्ति । या प्रत्य क्षेत्रः विद्या प्रति सुष्या त्या प्रदेश । या प्रस्ति । य

#### ন্বিষাশাস্ক্রমার্ক্তা

5

10

15

20

25

Therefore they do not operate differently from ignorance and depend upon ignorance because ignorance is chief.

देःक्षेत्रःक्ष्र्वःश्चर्यात्रःश्चर्यात्रःश्चर्यात्रः विष्यात्रः विष्यात्रः विष्यात्रः विष्यात्रः विष्यात्रः विषयात्रः विषयात्र

Hence, these afflictions are innate ones that have operated from beginningless time. However, because their mode of apprehension can be eradicated by reasoning, their referent objects do not exist even conventionally.

## देवे ख्री माञ्च ताञ्ची अप्ती क्षिया व्याप्त माञ्च का या विकास विकास कि कि विकास कि व

Therefore, among the objects of innate awarenesses, there are two types: those that can and cannot be refuted by reasoning.

यञ्च वर्षा वर्षे व त्या वर्षे व

The objects of those innate conventional valid cognitions that posit things such as forms, sounds, and so forth exist conventionally; thus, they are not refuted by reasoning.

देःद्वरात्राञ्चीताद्यात् अरमामुक्षायञ्चेत्रम् द्वर्षेत्राद्यात् । यद्वेत्र त्वर्षेत्राप्तस्यात् ।

Therefore, in the system of the masters Buddhaplita and Chandrakīrti, inherent existence, that is, establishment by way of [an object's] own entity, is refuted even conventionally.

## चःश्रृदःपदेःर्देवःक्स्स्याद्वसःपरःदर्देगःपःकेशःदगादःचरःश्रूदःविदः

Hence it appears to be very difficult to posit conventional objects.

If one does not know how to posit these well, without discredit [by reasoning], one does not gain ascertainment well with regard to the class of deeds whereby it appears that most fall to a view of [false] denial.

Therefore, those with intelligence should become skilled in how this system posits conventionalities.

10 दिने सन्ते 'केंग' अपका सुर्देग का कका ने 'उं अ' अका आ हुँ का की ।

Fearing too many words here, I will not elaborate more than this.

## [Chapter 11. Production Is Not Refuted]

10

15

20

### माञ्चुरायासुः यत्वेदिः ञ्चेः याधेवाधेवायहमाञ्चावायायायाः अवादिवेदारीः व्याप्यायास्य

[3/4] Third, Indicating That [The Existence Of Production And So Forth] Cannot Be Overcome Through A Refutation Upon Investigating Whether There Is Or Is Not Production Of The Four Alternatives

ऽ स्टाम्बिक् द्राप्त क्षिणा प्राप्त क्षु से द्राप्त क्षेत्र क्षेत्र व्याप्त क्षेत्र क्षेत्

There are two propositions: (1) if production [in general] is refuted through refuting production from self, other, both, and causelessly, then, since production of the four alternatives does not exist even conventionally in this one's [the Mādhyamika's] own system, one need not affix any qualification to the refutation of production; and...

यन्त्रम् अत्यात्रात्त्रेष्ट्

...(2) if production is not refuted [through that refutation of production from self, other, both, and causelessly], then the refutation of production of the four alternatives would not negate even ultimate production. From among these two, since we do not assert the former, I will explain the answer to the latter.

### र्देव'न्य'ग्री'ब्री'वा'वका'येव'व'ने'छेन'न्येंन्'यदे'न्रेगका'यका'न्युन'वर्बेन'न्'रेर्वेन'न्येंका'या

If one asserts ultimate production, it must be asserted as able to withstand analysis by the reasoning analyzing reality.

देवे कें देवाश्वायश्वायद्याद्याव्यात्वाद्यात्र्यां श्वायात्र्वे वादायश्चे द्वाद्यात्र्यात्र्यात्र्यात्र्यात्र्य स्टामी द्वाद्यात्र्यायस्य स्वायस्य स्वायस्य स्वायस्य स्वायस्य स्वायस्य स्वायस्य स्वायस्य स्वायस्य स्वायस्य स्व

And, in that case, one must then assert that reasoning analyzes from which of the four alternatives—self, other, and so forth, there is production. Hence, one who asserts ultimate production must definitely assert that it is analyzable as one of the four alternatives.

### कुप्तरक्तेत्रायनेत्रायनेत्रात्रकायनेत्रात्र्वात्राक्षेत्रात्रकायनेत्रात्र्वात्रात्र्वात्रात्रात्रात्रात्रात्र

Since a mere production that is the arising of such and such in dependence on such and such causes and conditions is asserted, real [or ultimate] production is not asserted; ...

# देशम्बद्धायस्त्रेन्तिः त्रिन्याद्धिन्यदे देशस्य स्वायस्य यद्याद्दायात् । द्युन्य व्यक्तिः तुः देन्द्रेन् स्वायदे स्वीयः यद्या स्वायस्य स्वायस्य स्वायस्य स्वायस्य स्वायस्य स्वायस्य स्वाय

...since such is not asserted, how could one analyze with the reasoning analyzing reality, "From which—self, other, and so forth—is there production?" For, there is no need to assert [production] as able to withstand analysis by reasoning.

## ग्वतःषटः यहेतः त्रश्चः भ्रेः यः रेतः ग्रीश्वासः यविदेः श्रेः यः दर्शेषः यः प्रेतः रे। दह्षाःयः यश्चा

Moreover, dependent production itself refutes production of the four alternatives, for Chandrakīrti's Madhyamakāvatāra (Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way", VI.115) says: 43

म्हास्त्रीत्रः प्रदेशः विदेशः विद्यान्त्रः स्वास्त्रः स्वास्त्रः स्वास्त्रः स्वास्त्रः स्वास्त्रः स्वास्त्रः स स्वास्त्रः स्वास्त्र

### डेबागबुदबायदे:धुरःर्दे।।

5

10

15

20

25

Because things arise dependently

These [mistaken] conceptions cannot withstand investigation.

Therefore, this reasoning of dependent-arising

Cuts all the nets of bad views.

# देशक् न्नु प्यः म्यायाक्षायः के प्यहेक् क्षाः भ्रुः प्यत्वेदिः भ्रुः प्यः दर्शेषाः छेदः तुः प्यतेदः त्या

Therefore, Chandrakīrti asserts dependent production as a means of refuting production of the four alternatives.

# खेद'वे'स्'त्रवे'ग्नद'यश'ग्रुद'से'क्क्षे'व'क्के'यद'सेद'र्द'वेश'यद्देद'यश'त्रुःग्नगश'न्दवेद'य'यश'र्क्षेन्व'वशक्के

However, since you are asserting that if there is no production from any of the four alternatives, then even mere production does not exist, it appears that you are propounding something opposite to what Chandrakīrti asserts.

### षदरें केंद्र यहा

Chandrakīrti's Madhyamakāvatāra (Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way", VI.114) also says: 44

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>43</sup> P5262, vol.98, 103.5.7. La Vallée Poussin's edition of the Tibetan, 228.1-4.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>44</sup> P5262, vol.98, 103.5.6-103.5.7. La Vallée Poussin's edition of the Tibetan, 226.6-9.

म्द्रिं स्क्रुशेत्रात्रात्रात्र्यः स्वात्रात्र्यः । न्द्रश्चर्यश्चर्यः श्चेत्रात्रात्र्यः स्वात्रात्र्यः । न्द्रश्चर्यश्चरः श्चेत्रात्रात्र्यः स्वात्रात्र्यः । न्द्रश्चर्यश्चरः श्चेत्रात्रात्र्यः स्वात्रात्र्यः । न्द्रश्चर्यस्य स्वात्रात्र्यः स्वात्रात्र्यः ।

Because things are not produced Causelessly, from causes such as Iśvara, Or from self, other, or both [self and other], They are produced dependently.

## बुश्रमञ्जूदश्यप्रदाष्ट्रित्रस्य त्रायायाः श्रुश्रायम् त्र शु

However, according to you, it would be contradictory [for Chandrakīrti] to say this.

देश्वात्रायहेत्वत्रश्चेश्चेश्वायदे हेत्र द्येषात्री सम्मायत्व प्राप्त प्रमाय प्रमाय सम्मायम् । विग्रा

Therefore, since the dependent-arising of dependent production is free from the four extremes, do not ask which among the four extremes is this which is free from extremes.

୕ଌୖଽ୕୵୕୕୶୲୷୵୵୵୷ଵ୕ୣ୶ୢ୕ୠ୕ଈ୕ଊୢୢୢୠ୶୷୕୵୵୵୷ୢୢୢୠ୕୶୷୕୷ଵୄ୕ଈୄ୷ୄୗ୲ୠ୵୷ୢଌୢୄ୕୵୷ଈୣ୕ଌ୕୵ଈ୕ୢୡୄୗ

Once again, these persons go wrong through not differentiating between non-inherent production and non-production.

ৰ্থ্য

5

10

15

20

25

देःकेदःभ्रान्यसःसःसेनासःयःगदःविगःगीस। । यद्गःददःगव्वरःयसःभ्रोःयःसेनासःसेवःयदे। । सेनासःदेसःसःभ्रुतःदुःणदःसेनासःसेवःस। ।

वेशमञ्जूदशयाद्भाः भ्राम्येवावावा

Qualm:: How do you explain the statement [in Chandrakīrti's *Madhyamakāvatāra (Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way"*, VI.36a-c)]:<sup>45</sup>

Through that very reasoning through which [it is seen] on the occasion of [analyzing] reality That production from self and from other are not reasonable [It is seen] that [production] is not reasonable even conventionally.

This passage was cited earlier by Dzong-ka-ba at the point of setting forth the overall assertions of those whom he considers to negate too much. See the Tibetan text 581.9. Also Chapter 4 Misidentifying the Object of Negation, p.179 of *Dependent-Arising and Emptiness*, also p. 41 above.

# 

[Answer.] This indicates that if substantially established production, or production that is established by way of its own character, is asserted, then those reasonings refute it even conventionally.

## 5 क्क्षुं प्राप्तं वर्षे वर्षे

10

15

20

It does not at all indicate a refutation of mere production, for in the transition to that passage [Auto]commentary on the Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way", Chandrakīrti] says:<sup>46</sup>

If someone says, "It must be taken that things having a substantial nature which serve as the causes of thoroughly afflicted and very pure phenomena are produced," [we answer] that in that case there would not remain even the words to propound such [?] Why?

# देः केद्भूत्रवश्राक्षेत्रार्श्वेत्रार्श्वेत्रार्श्वेत्रात्र्वत्रात्रव्यात्रव्यात्रव्यात्रव्यात्रव्यात्रव्यात्रव र्षिद्रपार्थाः वित्रवेत्रवेत्रार्शे वित्रवित्रवित्रवित्रव्यात्रव्यात्रव्यात्रव्यात्रवेत्रवेत्रवित्रवित्रवित्रव

At this point Chandrakīrti cites the passage above, "[Through that very reasoning through which] on the occasion of [analyzing] reality..." and then in commentary on that says:

Therefore, even though you do not want to, you must assert that production by way [an object's] own character does not exist as either of the two truths.

# 

Therefore, production that is established by way of its own entity is ultimate production; hence if it is asserted, even if it is asserted conventionally, it must be refuted in the way in which ultimate production is refuted.

Since this is the excellent assertion of this master [Chandrakīrti], one should not assert production that is established by way of its own entity even conventionally.

This is commentary leading in to VI.36.

#### বেছ্যা'ঘ'অখ্যা

र्बे म्वस्यस्य स्टम् नियन् मान्ति स्त्रीक्षा ।

क्षे स्टिस्स स्तर्भ स्त

#### ন্ত্রশন্ত্রশ্রহর শ্রহার

5

10

15

20

25

Chandrakīrti's Madhyamakāvatāra (Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way", VI.111) says:

Regarding the son of a barren woman, production by way of its own nature

Does not exist in reality nor in the world.

Similarly, all these things are not produced by way of

Their own entities for the world or in reality.

रत्यवित्रःश्रीश्रायात्राश्चेश्रायत्राश्चे।यदिः रत्यवित्रःशेत्यायाञ्चे।याः वित्रायाः वित्रः याः वित्रः य

To those who hold that non-inherent production, or the absence of inherent production, necessarily means that production does not exist and then raise the objection that dependent production and non-inherent production are contradictory, [Chandrakırti] says [in the *Yuktiṣaṣṭikāvṛtti* (*Commentary on (Nāgārjuna's*) "Sixty Stanzas of Reasoning"), cited immediately below], "They do not have ears or hearts [that is, minds]."

रदायत्वेत् श्रीश्वाश्चेश्वात्वेत् त्वेत्रायदे स्टायत्वेत् त्वेश्वायात्रे शार्चेश्वायस्याञ्चेश्वायस्य व्याद्वायायः विद्यायायः विद्यायः विद्याय

He said, "They do not have ears," thinking that they, without hearing [the qualification] "inherent" in our statement "non-inherent production" hold [that we have said] "non-production". He said, "They do not have hearts [that is, minds]," thinking that [even though they hear] the word "inherent", no meaning for that appears [to their minds].

देःस्वराधदः देवाबायः दुवाद्धः यदि । यहेवः वशक्षेत्रेश्वर्यः अःक्षेत्रायम । देःकेदः अद्धेवः यदेः अर्क्ववावीबः वाश्वरुषा ।

Nāgārjuna's Yuktisastikā (Sixty Stanzas of Reasoning, stanza 48cd) says:

The supreme of knowers of reality [i.e., Buddha] Said that that which is produced dependently is not produced.

### बेश्रायदे दश्वायायम्।

5

10

15

20

हेन उर्दायन्त्र प्रतित्व प्रतित्व प्रतित्व प्रति स्वास प्रतित्व प्रति । विष्य प्रति विषय प्रति विष

Commenting on that passage, Chandrakīrti's Yuktiṣaṣṭikāvṛtti (Commentary on (Nāgārjuna's) "Sixty Stanzas of Reasoning") says:<sup>47</sup>

When one sees dependent-arising, one does not observe things as inherently existent because that which is dependently produced is, like a reflection, not produced inherently.

*Objection*: Is it not the case that that which is dependently produced is only produced? How can you say that it is not produced?

उन्हें अञ्चे अर्थे लेका प्रहें दाव रेव हे प्रहेव वका क्रेटिं लेका प्रहें दाय स्था प्रहें व

If you say that something is not produced, then you should not say that it is dependently produced.

देवे भ्री रायव रहुंव प्रयापाय के दारी भ्री के प्रवेश के विषय के लिया

Therefore, because [these things] are mutually exclusive, [your position] is unsuitable.

ग्रें'अ'ग्रें'रुद्द्र'द्र'च'द्द्र'श्चेद'यश्च'ग्रद्द्रप्त अ'यर'वश्चुर'च'दद्दे'द्वे'विं'र्वे'उग'अ'द्रग्वद'चंद्वे।

[Answer.] Poor thing! Such an objection [to us] due to either not having ears or not having a heart [that is, a mind] has put us in a difficult situation.

म्द्रम् अप्तर्भः भ्राप्त स्वाप्त स्वापत स्

How, when we propound that dependently produced things are, like reflections, not produced inherently, could there be a chance for an objection?

डेबाम्बुदबायबाह्यदायम्द्रीद्रमाद्वीदायाम्बेबार्से।

Thus you should cherish making those distinctions.

P5265, vol. 98, 182.1.3-182.1.7. The differences between the passage as found in the Peking edition of the canon and as cited by Dzong-ka-ba are so numerous that either Dzong-ka-ba is merely giving a gloss of the text, or, as is more likely, he was looking at a different translation of it.

#### মার্ট্রামরান্রামাথরাস্ত্রা

Also, the Anavataptanāgarājapariprechāsūtra (Questions of the King of Nāgas, Anavatapta, Sūtra) says:

म्यान्तियाः क्रियः क्र

#### वेशम्द्रप्रद्र्येश

5

10

15

20

Whatever is produced from conditions is not produced; It does not have an inherent nature of production.

Whatever depends upon conditions is said to be empty;

One who knows emptiness is aware.

विश्वाप्तवास्त्रीश्वापान्तः साम्रीश्वापान्त्राम् स्वाप्तान्त्राम् स्वाप्तान्त्राम् । विश्वाप्तवापान्तः साम्रीश्वापान्तः साम्रीमः प्रत्यान्त्रम् स्वाप्तान्त्रम् ।

Having stated in the first line, "Whatever is produced from conditions is not produced," [Buddha] indicates with the second line the manner of non-production, "It does not have an inherent nature of production." Thus, affixing a qualification to the object of negation, [Buddha] says that things are not produced inherently.

दे.क्षे.वी.श्.ची.स.ची.ट.क्ष्मे.ट्र.ट्या.क्ष्मांता.क्यांता.क्ष्यांत्रीश्चाता.क्ष्में साता.क्ष्में साता.क्ष्में

Some, not understanding such and hearing [just] those words say, "Just the produced is non-produced; just the dependent does not depend." This appears to be a case of taking what is an assertive propounding of a collection of contradictions to be a high view.

बेबाम्बर्यान्द्रान्द्रस्याये स्वर्णान्य मान्यस्यात् । क्षेत्रमान्त्रस्याते स्वर्णान्य सम्बर्धाः स्वर्णान्य सम्बर्धाः स्वर्णान्यस्यात् । क्षेत्रमान्त्रस्याते सम्बर्णान्य सम्बर्धाः ।

This is also stated very clearly in the *Laṅkāvatārasūtra* (*Descent into Laṅkā Sūtra*) which is quoted by Chandrakīrti in his *Prasannapadā* (*Clear Words*):

Mahāmati, thinking that they are not produced inherently, I said that all phenomena are not produced.

# श्चे प्राप्त क्षा क्षा त्र क्षेत्र क्

Although an answer as to whether or not the qualification "ultimately" is to be affixed in the refutation of production and so forth has in fact been given [above], a specific answer will be set forth below [in Chapter Fourteen].

# 

These [points explained above] indicate that all the refutations [set forth by the Mādhyamikas' opponents] cannot refute [the Mādhyamikas'] mode of positing cause, effect, and so forth within no inherent existence.

# 10 श्चिम् स्त्रात्वितः स्त्रमः स्त्रमः वित्रात्यः वित्रात्य

In general, the ultimate fallacious refutation refers to one in which the analyses in the way in which one refutes one's opponent, those very agents of refutation, are made into nothing.

## ब्रिन्डमामीश्रायमें नियाने अन्तर्योत् रहीन सून्य श्रूमा श्रूमामी अवस्त्रमाया धिन हो।

5

20

25

15 Therefore, those things stated by you are the ulimate of fallacious refutations.

# 

For, in just the way that you refute the other's [that is, the Mādhyamika's] position, analyzing whether there is or is not discredit by reasoning and so forth, it is turned back on you and even your refutory reasonings become objects to be negated.

## नायाने हिंद् दे ना बना आर्था केंना का या विद्या या या विद्या या विद्या या विद्या या विद्या या विद्या या विद्या

Qualm: Because you assert the existence of forms and so forth, those analyses with regard to them apply to you.

### ऻॕॎॱचॅॱङगॱख़ॱॸॸॱख़ॖॺऻॺॱॻॖऀॱॾॗऀ॔ॺऻॺॱऄॸॱय़ॺॱॸय़ॖॸॱय़ॱॸॆॱॸॺॱऄॱढ़ॾॖॺॱॺॊ॔ॱॺॢॺॱॺऻ

However, since we have no position which is our own system, those analyses do not apply [to us].

# वदेशक्केंत्र'देनम्केंद्रश्चत्र्राच्यते वत्यव्याद्यम् रदः सदः सुदः मदः मेश्याप्तवायायवे वर्षायदे स्मावश्चर स्वरं स्वरं वर्षाय्य स्वरं स्वरं वर्षाय्य स्वरं स्वरं वर्षायः वर्यः वर्षायः वर्यः वर

[Answer:] That this [argument] cannot dispell these fallacies will be set forth [later] at the point of explaining whether [the view] is settled by way of consequences or syllogisms.

## यविष्य'न्द्रें **स**ंदें र्सेन् सेन्सेन्स'ग्री'सुप्यविष्म'र्पित्वाय'म्बेन्द्रिन्द्रिसेन्द्रप्यस्त्रस्त्रप्यस्त्र

[4/4] Fourth, Indicating That The Refutation Of All Four Alternatives—The Existence, Non-Existence, And So Forth Of Things—Is Not Suitable To Overcome [The Conventional Existence Of Production And So Forth]

# 5 रह्युः अदि मिलुस् द्वास्य विश्व प्रेस्थ प्रेय स्थान्य प्रेस्थ प्रेस

*Qualm*: In the Mādhyamika texts, all four possibilities—the existence of things, or inherent existence; their non-existence; both; and neither—are refuted, and since there are no phenomena that are not included in those, all [phenomena] are refuted by reasoning.

# 10 दर्ने त्रेश्वर पश्चर न्द्रेश्वर्य त्या विश्वर व

[Answer:] With regard to this, "thing" (bhāva, dngos po), as indicated earlier, has two [meanings]. 48 From among these, we refute the assertion that things that are established by way of their own entities exist as either of the two truths; however, things that are able to perform functions are not refuted conventionally.

# 15 द्रिंशर्याक्षेत्रपदरादतुषाक्षानुषाद्वस्यषात्पान्यराणीर्देश्वस्यानुवापदिःद्रिंशस्योत्रपुतिःदर्तत्वःतेःदेशस्यस्यस्यस्य ।

Also, with regard to non-things, if non-compounded phenomena are being asserted to be non-things that are established by way of their own entities, we refute also such non-things.

## नेप्तविव:५:५:५५:पर्व:पर्व:५:४:४:४:४५:पर्व:४:४४:४४

20

Similarly, we refute also that which is both such a thing and such a non-thing, and we also refute something that is not both that is established by way of its own entity.

## गढ़ेशगाःअध्येतःयः स्टामी देविश्वाय्यायत्यः तर्मेषाः यश्चायाविः तर्मेषाः द्वायाः वश्यायाः विश्वायाः विदेशा

Thus, you should know that all the ways of refuting the four alternatives are like this [that is, include the affixing of a qualification, "inherently"].

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>48</sup> See above, 597.16, for where Dzong-ka-ba discussed this earlier. The two meanings he sets forth are that it can mean "inherent existence" or "capacity to perform a function". It is in Chapter 7, p.203 of *Dependent Arising and Emptiness*.

# दे'त्रद्'चत्रे'द्वद्'चरः श्रुच्यः श्रुचत्रेश्चग्यः स्प्यं विश्वायः स्प्यं विश्वायः स्प्यं विश्वायः स्प्यं विश्व स्थित्रे विश्वायः स्थितः स्थितः स्थितः स्थितः स्थितः स्थितः स्थितः स्थितः स्यायः स्थितः स्थित

If you refute all four alternatives without having any such qualification to affix, then, having refuted, at the time of refuting that things exist and things do not exist, [something that is both] saying, "[Things] are not both [existent and non-existent]," if you then refute [that which is neither] saying, "[Things] are not not both [existent and non-existent]," you have explicitly contradicted your own assertion.<sup>49</sup>

## दे<sup>ॱ</sup>१५८ भित्र ग्रीट क्रिंत से दें देश प्रक्षेत्र क्रिंत क्षेत्र क

If you then obstinately say, "Even so, there is no fallacy," we do not debate with the obstinate.

10

15

20

5

Furthermore, when inherent existence, or self, that is to say, an establishment by way of their own entity, is refuted with regard to the aggregates, a wisdom consciousness thinking, "Inherent existence, or self, does not exist," is produced.

# नेश्वास्तिःनेश्वास्ताः मुद्याः श्वास्ति । क्ष्यास्ति । क्ष्यास्ति । क्ष्यास्ति । क्ष्यास्त्रा श्वास्ति । क्ष्यास्त्रा श्वास्ति । क्ष्यास्त्रा श्वास्ति । क्ष्यास्त्रा श्वास्त्रा श्वास्ति ।

Should you refute the non-inherent existence that is the object of that wisdom consciousness, you are casting away <sup>50</sup> the Mādhyamika view. For, you are casting away the object of the wisdom consciousness realizing that phenomena do not inherently exist.

I will ask this question to those who assert that both inherent existence and non-inherent existence are cast away: Please set forth just how the non-inherent existence that is the object of the wisdom ascertaining, "The aggregates do not inherently exist," is cast away.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>49</sup> Basically, Dzong-ka-ba is asserting a committment to common sense and meaningful use of words and negatives. His point is that if you assert that something does not exist, you have asserted that it is non-existent; by asserting that something is not non-existent, you have asserted that it is existent; having asserted that it is not both [existent and non-existent], through then asserting that it is not not both, you have asserted that it is both. In this paragraph, he is focusing on the contradiction involving the last two alternatives. If you say that something is not both (existent and non existent), you cannot with any logical consistency turn right around and say that it not not both—because you are explicitly contradicting what you have just said.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>50</sup> I've tried cast away 4 times here for sun 'byin. I'm not sure how it works, It might be better just to use "refute".

#### इ.चे.जश

5

10

15

20

[Perhaps] you think it is because Nāgārjuna's Mūlamadhyamakakārikā (Treatise on the Middle Way, XIII.7) says:

#### ন্বিমাশ্বসুহরাঘরা

If there were anything not empty, Then something emptiness would also exist; If there is anything not empty, How could the empty exist?

# য়ऀॱॠॕॸॱय़ॱॸॖऀॱ୴ॸॱऄॸॱय़ॺॱॸॸॱय़ज़ऀॺॱऄॸॱय़ढ़ऀॱॠॕॸॱय़ढ़ॸॱख़ॕॸॖॱय़ॱॴॵॺॱॺॕ॔ॱॠॖॺॱॺऻॗ

Therefore, because there is nothing that is not empty, the emptiness that is the absence of inherent existence also does not exist.

[Answer.] Here [in Nāgārjuna's Mūlamadhyamakakārikā] "empty" and "non-empty" refer to being empty and not empty of inherent existence, and they are used in this way throughout the entire text, beginning to end.

Thus "not empty of inherent existence" means "inherently established".

What could be more laughable than your propounding that since inherent establishment does not in the least exist, the emptiness that is the non-existence of inherent establishment also does not exist!

Furthermore, the ascertainment apprehending that some such thing as a sprout does not inherently exist, that is, is not established by way of its own entity, is apprehending that the sprout does not have inherent existence.

र्यात्वेत्रः सेन्याने वित्रासी वित्रास

It is not apprehending either of the two—that the absence of inherent existence exists or does not exist. With regard to this, close your eyes, turn inward, and realize it; it is very easy to understand.

5 ने 'क्रु' त' स्र स्य स्वित 'श्रेन 'स्य 'प्यार्थेन 'स्य स्वाहुर तु 'श्रे' सुर स्य प्येत 'स्य स्वाहुर स्वाहुर

Even if it were the case that, due to its being unsuitable to apprehend non-inherent existence as existing, it were correct to refute with reasoning the existence of emptiness in order to overcome the apprehension of non-inherent existence as existing, one would still have to assert that one was refuting the object of some other mind that was apprehending non-inherent existence to exist.

## ॖॖॷॱॹॖॱख़ॱॸॸॱॻढ़ॏढ़ॱऄॸ॔ॱय़ॸॱॸॣॕॺऻॺॱय़ढ़ऀॱऄॺॱॸय़ॱॻॖऀॱख़ॖख़ॱढ़ॺॕऻॿॱय़ॱक़ऀॱऄॺॱऄढ़ॱॸॖॱऄॱढ़ॿॸ॔ॱॸ<u>ॕ</u>ऻ

10

A refutation of the object of the wisdom realizing that a sprout does not exist inherently is extremely incorrect.

15 र्वि:र्वे:उगार्वे:श्वु:गु:वा:स्टर्मी:र्देवेश:गुवःपदे:स्टर्पावेव:प्रगागःपव:स्टर्पावेव:शेट्रें:श्रूश:तु:देश:परःदशुरःवा

When we refute inherent existence, that is establishment by way of its own entity, with regard to a sprout, there is ascertainment thinking that [the sprout] does not inherently exist.

देवशर्त्त्वाच्यात्वेषाः विषयः विषय

Then, even if some other awareness apprehends that non-inherent existence as existing, its object is not refuted with reasoning. However, if that emptiness were asserted to be established by way of its own entity, it would be refuted.

Qualm: How could one generate an apprehension that the absence of inherent existence inherently exists?

25 श्रुमुदिः स्टायलेव सेन्या भाव का श्रुमुदिः स्टायलेव त्रास्य माण्य स्थ्रुम् स्टायलेव सेन्या सेन्या सेन्या सेन्या सेन्या सेन्या स्थ्री सेन्या सेन्य

[Answer:] Even though, upon observing the non-inherent existence of a sprout, it is not established as an inherent existence of the sprout, one might generate an apprehension thinking that that non-inherent existence exists as an inherent existence of that [sprout].

## दयेरत्। तुस्रायासेरायात्रस्यायार्षेरायरायरेतासूस्रायासीस्रीष्यायासीस्रीप्यायसेरात्रस्यायास्रीयायालेतार्वे।

For example, even though one would not generate the thought, "It is true that a pot exists [here]," with regard to [a place where] a pot does not exist, one might generate the thought, "It is true that a pot does not exist [here]."

# <u>देःधूरः तुक्षात्रः रदायत्वेतः ग्रीकाश्चेदः यञ्चदः अदः अदः यक्षाश्चाग्वादेः रदायत्वेतः अदः यदेः श्चेदः यः यः यद</u> र्ने लेकान्यहें न व कु अर्द्धव प्यन्तिया प्रत्ये न वे ।

Since, taken in this way, there does not exist at all anything that is not empty of inherent existence, it is perfectly right to say that even the emptiness that is a sprout's absence of inherent existence is not established by way of its own entity.

## यत्नेयम् यते र्यो वायर वर्ष भूराय ते द्वराय के दार यो दे विश्वाय या वर्षे वाय विश्व या या विश्व या या विश्व या

Chandrakīrti's Commentary on (Āryadeva's) "Four Hundred" speaks of refuting that emptiness is established by way of its own entity:<sup>51</sup>

# **दे:**श्चर:रु।

10

15

20

25

ग्याने क्रेंदाय केंद्र केंब्रा व्याय स्टाची दें वेंब्रा या प्याय क्ष्माय क्षेत्र केंद्र केंब्र वें देंब्र वें क्ष्माय स्टाव क्षेत्र प्रस्ति क्ष्माय स्टाव क्षाय स्टाव या प्रस्ति क्षाय स्टाव या प्रस्ति क्षाय स्टाव या प्रस्ति क्षाय स्टाव क्षाय स्टाव या प्रस्ति क्षाय स्टाव वः वेंद्राया वे वा व्यव वेंद्रावेश्वायश्व प्रवे क्षेत्राय विदाय

If that which is called emptiness did have some establishment by way of its own entity, then things would come to have inherent existence. However, it does not. In order to indicate this, [Āryadeva] said (XVI.7):

ब्रिंद रीव सेद सम्बंद स्वी गद्रायश्चरवृद्दायःहेदःतुरवश्चर।। दे:कृ'सुराव'डेग'र्नेश्वी बेर'यर'गहेब'यें'य्व्रद्यर'यर'य्गुरा।

#### ন্বরাশ্ব্রেরার্থী

In that nothing is not empty, From what could emptiness arise? In that there does not exist the other side [alt., As there is nothing to oppose] How could an antidote arise?

<sup>51</sup> P5266, vol. 98, 276.3.2-276.3.4.

# ने 'स्र' अ'षीव' प्यसः स्टायतीव' स्रोन् 'पारी 'र्झूं दः हीन' र्ष्णेन' पारवर्षे माव' स्टायतीव' स्रोन् 'पासे ने 'प्रस्' वे 'स्राव' स्टायतीव' स्रोन् 'प्रस' स्टायतीव' स्रोत् प्यसः (६४०) 'रशुः त्र 'प्रस' स्टायतीव' स्रोत् प्रस' स्टायतीव' स्रोत् प्रस' स्टायतीव' स्रोतिव स्रोतिव स्टायतीव' स्टा

Otherwise, if one refuted the existence of emptiness, that is, of non-inherent existence, then non-inherent existence would become non-existent. In that case, inherent existence, that is, establishment by way of [an object's] own entity, would exist, whereby it would be unsuitable in all ways to refute inherent existence.

## ने स्टूरणरा ईन त्र्विंग यश

5

10

15

20

25

For, in this vein, Nāgārjuna's Vigrahavyāvartanı (Refutation of Objections, stanza 26) says:<sup>52</sup>

How could that which is without inherent existence

Overturn non-inherent existence?

If non-inherent existence were overturned,

Inherent existence would be thoroughly established.

#### बेशपदि स्टर्स्

And, Nāgārjuna's Vigrahavyavārtinivṛtti (Commentary on the "Refutation of Objections), commenting on that, says very clearly:<sup>53</sup>

हे सुराञ्च अपति विकास प्राप्त क्षेत्र क्षेत

Someone might say that just as through saying, "Don't speak," speaking is stopped, so non-inherently existent words refute the non-inherent existence of things.

देशव,र्यः तर्रः तर्यः तस्य स्यायः त्यु रायः विषात्र।

[Answer.] Even though the example is correct, [the meaning exemplified is not].

दर्ने वे क्षेत्र स्टायबेव सेन्य केन्य केन्य केन्य केन्य के कार्य क्षेत्र कार्य केन्य केन्य

Here, non-inherently existent words refute an inherent existence of things.

<sup>53</sup> P5232, vol. 95, 60.3.5-60.3.8.

The last two lines were cited earlier by Dzong-ka-ba, 599.15-16, Ch 7, DA &E, p.206

षीव्ययम् त्युम् में। ।

बिव्ययम् त्युम् में। ।

बिव्ययम् त्युम् में। ।

बिव्ययम् त्युम में। ।

बिव्ययम् त्युम में। ।

## बेशनिवः तृत्वाश्रयः यस्य श्रुदश्यितः द्वी सः र्दे।

If non-inherently existent words could refute the non-inherent existence of things, then because non-inherent existence itself was refuted, things would come to have inherent existence, and because of having inherent existence, they would not be empty.

## देशवःश्रूमः इतिः खुदः।

5

10

15

20

25

क्रॅ्रिट या खेंद्र यम जा त्या त्या ह्या ।

## ড়ৢয়৻য়ঽ৻ঽ৾৻য়৻য়য়৻ঢ়ৢ৻

Therefore, just after the passage in the Mūlamadhyamakakārikā (Treatise on the Middle Way, XIII.7) cited above, "...How could could the empty exist?" Nāgārjuna says (XIII.8):

म्यायस्यस्य श्रीका क्ष्रेंद्राय कित्। । स्रागुत्र देशाय स्वित्र स्वर म्यूस्य। । स्रागुत्र देशाय स्वित्र स्वर म्यूस्य। । स्वाया स्वर्था स्वर्था ।

The Conqueror said that emptiness Eradicates all [bad] views; Those who view emptiness [as inherently existent] Were said to be incurable.

बेश्ययतः हें द्रायाः हे द्रायाः वेश्ययतः स्टायबेश्यः विश्वास्य वि

Here also, "viewing emptiness" does not refer to the view thinking, "This is empty of inherent existence," but is said with regard to conceiving the emptiness that is the emptiness of inherent existence to be truly existent or viewing it as an inherently existent thing (*bhāva*, *dngos po*).

### तुरङ्गायुः वीः हः यश्रा

5

10

15

20

25

For, the Buddhapālitamūlamadhyamakavṛtti (Buddhapālita Commentary on (Nāgārjuna's) Treatise on the Middle Way") says this very clearly along with an example:<sup>54</sup>

मद्द्रम् प्रस्थान्त्रम् स्वात्त्रम् स्वात्त्रम् स्वात्त्रम् स्वात्त्रम् स्वात्त्रम् स्वात्त्रम् स्वात्त्रम् स्व स्वात्त्रम् स्वात्त्रम्

When one expresses "emptiness" to those who conceive that things exist by way of their own entities, indicating things' emptiness of existing by way of their own entities by saying, "These dependent-arisings are designated as things through the force of causes and conditions; things do not exist by way of their own entities," those [persons' mis-] conceptions can be overcome.

यद्द्रमार्श्वेद्दर्याः केद्द्रमार्थे केद्द्रमार्थे केद्द्रमार्थे केद्द्रमार्थे केद्द्रमार्थे केद्द्रमार्थे केद यद्दर्भ केद्द्रमार्थे केद्द्रमार्थे केद्द्रमार्थे केद्द्रमार्थे केद्द्रमार्थे केद्द्रमार्थे केद्द्रमार्थे केद्द

However, nothing can overcome the conceptions of those who conceive that emptiness is an inherently existent thing.

न्येम्ब। केष्णम्येन्द्रं बेश्च्रुश्यायात्रकेष्णम्येन्यान्दे प्रमान्येन्यान्दे वित्रकेषात्रे स्वान्यान्य स्वेन्यान्य स्वेन्य स्वेन्यान्य स्वेन्यान्य स्वेन्यान्य स्वेन्यान्य स्वेन्यान्य स्वेन्य स

बेबाद्येर्द्राच्डबाहेरम्बाख्याचरम्बुद्बायदेख्वेरर्दे।

For example, if you tell someone, "I have nothing," and that person then says, "Give me that nothing," how could you cause that person to enter into conceiving that you have nothing?

देश्वरः अः ग्रुष्ठाः तुर्देवः यः क्रींवः अधिवः श्री। यतुषाः विष्ठाः विष्ठाः विष्ठाः क्रींवः अधिवः श्री।

If it is not taken in this way, the example would be inappropriate. When one person says to another, "Give me some wealth," and that person responds, "I have no wealth," there is no fault if the first person thinks, "This one has no wealth."

.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>54</sup> P5242, vol. 95, 101.4.7-101.5.2.

#### वें राशेन्याने त्यां के रातु प्रवाहत वाने ते के कें निर्माय राते का या क्षेत्र स्वाह प्रवाह का कें प्रवाह के क विवासेन्दि विकास कें निर्माय स्वाह के कें कें कें स्वाह प्रवाह के स्वाह के किया के किया के किया के किया के किय विवास कें किया के किया

However, if that absence of wealth is considered to be wealth, then there is no way to generate an ascertainment of the absence of wealth. In just the same way, if one says to a person who asks, "Do things have inherent existence or not?", "They do not have inherent existence," what fault is there if the questioner conceives, "Things do not have inherent existence," since the speaker wished [the questioner] to generate that [conception]?

## र्देवःगुर-५र्देशःदेवेः सरायविवासे५।याने किनायास्यायविवानु यञ्चरावः क्रींवाधिवाने ।

However, there is a fault if that non-inherent existence of things itself is considered to exist inherently.

#### 

Since according to your interpretation, even the conception, "This one has no wealth," [generated upon] being told, "I have no wealth," must be refuted, if you rely upon our explanation, it is beautiful.

Also in the *Prasannapadā* (*Clear Words*), [Chandrakīrti] speaks of adhering to emptiness as an inherently existent thing (*bhāva*); hence, he is not refuting emptiness, and further, there is no fault in merely viewing emptiness.

#### देशवःश्रूदःयःयश्रा

5

15

20

25

#### वेशय:५८॥

Therefore, one should understand as explained earlier the *Ārya-prajñāpāramitā-sancaya-gāthā* (Condensed Perfection of Wisdom in Verse, I.9cd) which says:

If a Bodhisattva conceives, "The aggregates are empty," then he or she is practicing signs [a false reality] and does not have faith in the topic (yul) of non-production.

#### रेव केव सेट या श्रामुदा

यन्गःन्दःयन्गःग्रेन्यक्षःयःन्गः । नेःस्त्रेमःस्यायःकेनःयंश्वःयर्ज्जेगः ।

#### উষাশাস্ত্রমানীনা

10

15

20

25

5 Also, Nāgārjuna's Ratnāvalı (Precious Garland, 103cd) says:

Therefore the great Sage refuted Views of self and selflessness.

# चन्द्र-प्रस्तिन्त्रेत्र-तेश्व-त्र्र्भाव्यश्चर्ष्यः व्यव्यक्ष्यः व्यव्यक्षः व्यवस्यक्षः विष्यक्षः विषयक्षः विष्यक्षः विष्यक्षः विषयक्षः विषयक्षः विषयक्षः विषयक्षः विष्यक्षः विष्यक्षः विष्यक्षः विषयक्षः विष्यक्षः विषयक्षः विषयक्षः विषयक्षः विषयक्षः विषयक्षः विषयक्षः व

Although these and other scriptures and treatises say that it is unsuitable to view emptiness and selflessness, they should be understood as was explained earlier.

# ने 'कृ' अ'भैव'व। वृ'र्रेते' तुस्र श्रुव' रस्य मृत्रेम् श्रुव' त्राय देव प्रत्य प्रत

Otherwise, this would contradict a great many statements such as those which follow. As an answer to Śāriputra who asked Avalokiteśvara how one who wished to practice the profound Perfection of Wisdom should train, [Avalokiteśvara] said [in the *Heart Sūtra*]:

[A bodhisattva] should thoroughly and correctly view these five aggregates as empty of inherent existence.

## শুন্যথেশ্বাশুন্য

र्क्षअस्य स्टायित्व सेट्य स्थित स्था सुनि सा सुन्य स्था ।

#### वेशप्र ५५ ।

The Ārya-prajñāpāramitā-sancaya-gāthā (Condensed Perfection of Wisdom in Verse, I.28cd) says:

One who thoroughly knows that phenomena do not inherently exist is practicing the supreme Perfection of Wisdom.

#### तह्मायायमागुरा

15

20

25

देख्वैरःयन्वान्दरःयन्वाःवीक्षःक्ष्रंदःक्षःयका । इत्यःवर्चेरःयःदेद्वसःयरःच्यांव्यःयरःव्युरा ।

### बेश्राम्बुद्रश्रायार्श्वम्श्राम्बित्रानुस्रायात्राचे द्रमाप्त्राद्रप्रायायायम् दशुमार्दे ।

5 Chandrakīrti's Madhyamakāvatāra (Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way", VI.165cd) says:

Therefore, through the view of the emptiness of I and mine, A yogi will be released.

## देश्वत्र्तुर्याश्वस्रश्चर्येः स्यावे स्टायने त्राक्षेत्रः व्यावे स्वाया स्वाया स्वाया स्वाया स्वाया स्वाया स्व

Therefore, the root of all difficulties is the ignorance that superimposes inherent existence.

10 दे'द्र'यहॅब'श्रूरश्चर्द्रश्चांशुयम्यायदे'र्झ्चे'वश्चादे'दुरश्चायद्वैव'यावि'स्टायबेव'श्चेद'यवश्चाद्वप्यादे'वेश्चास्याक्ष्मा मुद्देमाण्येव'व'देदे'यहेव'श्रूरश्चाशुव'यद्विव'व'दे'वें'व'केत्'ची'श्चायमाम्यावी'श्चीयदेवे श्चीयदेव'द्वदामश्चाद्व

That which eradicates it by way of a mode of apprehension explicitly contradicting it is only the wisdom realizing non-inherent existence, or selflessness. If that is so, then, if you refute its [that wisdom's] mode of apprehension, you must assert, even if you do not wish to, that you are refuting the view of suchness.

Chandrakīrti's *Commentary on (Aryadeva's) "Four Hundred"*, at the point at which [Āryadeva] says, "There is no second door to peace," (XII.13a) says:

यम् क्ष्यायाः स्त्रियाः स्वाचित्रः स्वाच्याः स्वच्याः स्वाच्याः स्वच्याः स्वाच्याः स्वच्याः स्वच्याः स्वच्य

The thorough extinguishment of attachment is the cause of attaining nirvāṇa, and, except for the view of non-inherent existence, there is no other doctrine that is a cause of thoroughly extinguishing such attachment.

Therefore, this selflessness that has the character of non-inherent existence is the door to peace that has no second, for just this is the door without equivalent for entering to the city of nirvāna.

मायाके प्यत्र क्षेत्र याके द्रायाके द्रायाके द्राया के द

Even though there are the three doors of liberation called "emptiness", "signlessness", and "wishlessness", nonetheless only the view of selflessness is chief.

How could one who knows all phenomena without exception as selfless and has extinguished completely attachment with regard to all things be intent on [i.e., wish for] or apprehend signs with regard to anything at any time?

Therefore, selflessness is the door to peace having no second. Thus the *Collection of Enlightenment* explains:

बेशप्तन्दर्भे।

5

10

15

20

Because [phenomena] do not inherently exist, they are empty.
Further, because one has [realized] emptiness, what use is [misconception of] signs.
Because they have overcome all signs [i.e., misconceptions about reality]

Why would the wise plant wishes [for such]?

त्रश्चरश्चरायरः व्याप्तरः द्वीत्रायश्चरः द्वीतः प्रत्यात्रः विष्ठः स्त्रीत्रः स्त्रीत्रः स्त्रायः स्त्रायः स्त्रीत्रः स्त्रायः स्त्

Thus [Chandrakīrti] dispels the contradiction of explaining that there are three doors to liberation and also explaining that just the view that is the view of the emptiness of inherent existence is the door to liberation, and he proves with scripture and reasoning that just that [view] is the door to liberation.

5

Why should the mere elimination of inherent existence imply the refutation of object [of a wisdom consciousness]?

For, the realization of such is the antidote to misconceiving the two selves and it does not have even the odor of misconception of reality.

If, viewing even such a conception as faulty, you refute all conceptuality whatsoever—good or bad—then it is clear that you wish to set up the system of the Chinese abbot Hva-shang.

### [Chapter 12. Not Negating Enough]

गढ़ेश्रायाद्रमामानुःर्देशायदेवानुनासुदश्रायाद्रमामान्यायाने।

[2/2] Second, Refuting A Too Limited Identification Of The Object To Be Negated

विक्रियाः व

5

10

15

20

25

न्यायाः चुःतेः स्टायत्वेत्रः धोतः त्यादेः धादाद्वद्यायः याश्रुशः दृः द्यः श्रुः दृः द्यः श्रुः दृः द्यः श्रुः द यावतः दृःशेः दश्चरः याद्वद्यायः दृः धादाद्वद्यायः याश्रुशः दृः द्यः श्रुः दृः द्यः श्रुः दृः द्यः श्रुः दृः द्य

*Qualm*: The object to be negated is *svabhāva* and it is that which possesses the three attributes: entity—not being produced by causes and conditions; state—being immutable; and certification—not depending on another.

दे'षद'द्वु'अदे'**ः**'द'यश्र

For, Nāgārjuna's Mūlamadhyamakakārikā (Treatise on the Middle Way, XV.1-2) says:

য়ु: ५८: मुंत्रः यश्च व्यात्रः यश्च विष्यः यः उत्तर्तः विष्यः यः विष्यः यः विष्यः यः विष्यः यः विष्यः यः विष्यः यः विषयः य

It is not reasonable that an [inherent, or final] nature Arise from causes and conditions. If it did arise from causes and conditions That [inherent, or final] nature would be something made.

स्टायबित्रानुसायाञ्जताबेशानुस्। । इ.क्षे.विसायाञ्चरावेशानुस्। । स्टायबित्रानुसायाञ्जताबेशानुस्। ।

वेशमञ्जूदशयदेः धुरः रें वेश

ヨエギリ

How could it be suitable For an [inherent, or final] nature to be "made"? An [inherent, or final] nature is non-fabricated And does not depend on another. 15

20

# श्चीराशुःताःत्राःश्चेषाश्चायतेःश्चेःत्रराषीः दर्दशार्यः द्वसश्चार्यः वित्रादेः तद्वायः वित्रातः त्वित्रातः वित्रातः वित्र

[Answer.] In general, if one asserts that internal and external things such as sprouts are established as such [inherent, or final] natures, the Mādhyamikas indeed must refute such.

ऽ दिन्द्र-त्यायान्तुः र्देश्वः दिहेत् त्यान्ते। यादः वियान्ययायान्तः र्केश्वः इस्रक्षः स्टान्यवित् स्रोत् त्यः कित् तुः हिं याश्वः त्यः विवश्यः स्रोतः क्षुः नः क्रुतः त्यः क्षेत्रः त्यायान्तः क्षेत्रः त्यायान्तः क्षेत्रः त्यायान्तः क्षेत्रः त्यायान्तः विवश्यः विवश्य

However, here, the identification of the object to be negated is an identification of that *basic* object to be negated with regard to which, when it is negated, the Mādhyamika view realizing that phenomena lack inherent existence [or an inherent nature] is generated in one's continuum.

ने 'क्षेत्र'व' तत्त्रा'नु श्वाद्वात्रां श्वाद्वात्त्र विषय्यात्त्र प्राप्त प्राप्त विषय प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्र प्

Hence, since our own [non-Mādhyamika Buddhist] schools have already established that compounded phenomena are produced by causes and conditions and are mutable, it would [absurdly] not be necessary to prove non-inherent existence to them and also they would [absurdly] have realized the non-inherent existence of things. Because there are such fallacies, how could this be the uncommon object to be negated!

यः वै दिः येश्वा व्याप्ति स्वर्धा क्षेत्र त्या विषयः विषयः

In many Mādhyamika texts, there occurs the flinging [of consequences] such as: If things were established inherently, that is, if they were established by way of their own entities, they would have not to depend on causes and conditions, they would have to be immutable, and so forth.

ख्याचेर् ची देशक्षात्र का क्रींत्र प्रहेर् प्राय्येत ची। रणणा च प्रत्येत की देशके क्रींत्र का प्रत्येत की ।

However, this is an expression of fault by way of an entailment; it is not an identification of the object to be negated by way of its entity.

# मान्त्राध्यः प्रत्याध्यः प्रत्याध्यः मान्यः मुद्याध्यः प्रत्याचेत्रः प्रत्याच्यः मुद्याः मुद्याः मुद्याः मुद्य दे प्रमान्त्रे प्रत्याध्यः मुद्याध्यः भ्रम् मान्यः मुद्याध्यः प्रत्याचेत्रः मान्यः मुद्याः मान्यः मुद्याः मान्य

Moreover, even though it is the case that if something were ultimately established, were actually<sup>55</sup> established, or were truly established, it would necessarily not depend on causes and conditions, and so forth, those [attributes of not depending on causes and conditions, and so forth] are not the meaning of ultimate establishment, and so forth.

## न्येन्त्र। सुअप्यात्पञ्चेम्हण्यश्चात्वयायाद्यसम्बद्धायात्वे वित्तुः स्वर्ते स्वर्त्यायात्वे स्वर्ते स्वर्ते स्व

For example, even though pot entails impermanence, impermanence is not suitable to be the meaning of pot; rather "bulbous thing ..." <sup>56</sup> must be posited as its meaning.

# 10 दे प्रावित पुर्देत प्रथाय म्युपाय केंग्राक्ष भित्र त्राक्ष से प्रायि प्रदेश में मात्र प्रयोग प्रायि प्रवित प्रायि प्राय प्रायि प्राय प्रायि प्रायि प्राय प्रायि प्राय प्रायि प्राय प्रायि प्राय प्राय

Similarly, if something were ultimately established and so forth, it would have to be a partless thing; nonetheless, partless thing is not asserted as the basic object to be negated here.

# देवे श्वापायावतः श्वापाद्मस्य सामी साध्व स्वितः सामी व प्यते प्यते प्यते प्यत्ता प्रमायात्र मान्या प्रमायात्र सामी व प्यते प्यते प्रमायात्र मान्या प्रमायात्र सामी व प्यते प्रमायात्र सामी व प्यते प्रमायात्र सामी व प्यते प्रमायात्र सामी व प्

For, since those [partless things] are merely imputed by the uncommon apprehension of proponents of [false] tenets, such conceptions are not the root [cause] that binds embodied beings in cyclic existence.

# दे'द्रम्'रद्रप्तवेत्रअद्रप्रस्मात्रत्यस्य त्रश्रायञ्चेत्रश्चर्षेत्रश्चर्यात्रश्चर्यात्रश्चर्यात्रश्चर्यात्रश्चर देत्रश्चर्तत्रश्चर्यात्रहेत्रम्थर्यास्य स्वर्यात्रस्य स्वरङ्गेत्रश्चर्यात्रस्य स्वर्यस्य स्वर्यस्य स्वर्यस्य स्वर्यस्य स्वर्यस्य स्वर्यस्य स्वर्यस्य स्वर्यस्य स्वर्यस्य स्वरं स्वर्यस्य स्वरं स्

Further, although you determined and then meditated on those [partless things] as without inherent existence, it would not at all counter the ignorant conception that has operated from beginningless time. Therefore, even if you brought to completion the direct realization of that meaning, it would not overcome innate afflictions.

# 

Thus, when determining [the nature of phenomena] by way of the view, you should take as primary determining that an object as conceived by innate ignorance does not exist and as a branch of that refute objects of artificial conceptions.

55

25

5

15

yang dag par.

The technical definition of "pot" is "bulbous, splay based thing able to perform the function of holding water."

क्ष्रायाम् अस्य स्थान्त्र स्यान्त्र स्थान्त्र स्यान्त्र स्थान्त्र स्थान्त्र स्थान्त्य

If, not knowing that, you forsake overcoming the mode of apprehension of innate ignorance, and, when refuting a self of persons, refute a self that is permanent, single, and independent and, when refuting a self of phenomena, refute things that are imputed only by proponents of tenets—objects that are partless particles, subjects that are partless moments, an [inherent, or final] nature possessing the three attributes, and so forth—this is in all ways unsuitable.

दे दे से श्री व ते से प्रत्या महित त्या प्रयोग्य प्रति प्रश्चित प्रति हैं स्वर्ग की माण्य महित त्या स्वर्ग प्रश्चित प्रति हैं स्वर्ग की माण्य महित त्या स्वर्ग प्रति हैं स्वर्ग की माण्य स्वर्ग प्रति हैं स्वर्ग की माण्य स्वर्ग प्रति हैं स्वर्ग की माण्य स्वर्ग प्रति हैं स्वर्ग स्वरंग स्वर्ग स्वर्ग स्वर्ग स्वर्ग स्वर्ग स्वरंग स्वर्ग स्वरंग स्वरंग

If you don't see this, at the time of determining [the nature of phenomena] by way of the view, you have determined nothing more than this, whereby, also at the time of meditation, you have to meditate only on this, for the determining [of the nature of phenomena] by way of the view is for the sake of meditation.

# देवे ख्री रावर्क्के अका वका अर्देव दुः शुराया दरार्के अकाया देः अध्य ख्रिणाव तर रहे खेळा विवा हुः बदाया

Therefore, even if you upon meditation actualized [such a selflessness] and brought familiarization with it to completion, it would be no more than just that.

देल्द्र-गुत्र-यहण्यानी विदेत-प्रयायहण्याचान्याचान्यानी यहेत्याची यहेत्। यहेत्याच्याची विदेश स्थानी स्थानी विदेश स्थानी स्थानी स्थानी स्थानी स्थानी स्यानी स्थानी स्थानी

If you assert that through seeing as non-existent the two selves merely as they are imputed by such artificial conceptions, innate afflictions are overcome, it is extremely absurd.

#### दर्गायायश

5

10

15

20

25

30

#### बेशमञ्जूदशः भेटा

Chandrakīrti's Madhyamakāvatāra (Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way", VI.140) says:

Some, at the time of realizing selflessness, abandon a permanent self,

But this is not asserted as the basis of the conception of I.

Therefore, propounding that the view of self is thoroughly removed

Through knowing [such a] selflessness is very absurd.

#### বন্ত্রীঅ'ঘ'অঙ্কাশ্রুহ'।

5

10

15

20

25

# षतः सुंतः राष्ट्रेयाया सेन् पारि रेन्त्रा राष्ट्रे रेन्त्रा राष्ट्रे राष्ट्र

Chandrakīrti's Madhaymakāvatārabhāsya ([Auto]commentary on the Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way") says:

In order to illuminate by way of an example the meaning of this senseless propounding, it is said (VI.141):

र्दः विश्वः क्षेत्रः स्वतः स्

## वेशमञ्जूदशःहै।

Someone sees a snake living in the wall of his house. [Another] to dispel his fear says, "There is no elephant here." That this would dispel the fear of the snake Is, alas, a source of laughter for others.

## यदे'म्दा अवामी यद्या सेदायाम् स्टब्स ग्राप्त स्वामी यद्या सेदाया सेदाया

This was said with regard to the selflessness of the person, but it is similar also with regard to the selflessness of phenomena, being applied [to the above verse as follows]:

## लेशःश्रुरःर्रे।।

Some, at the time of realizing selflessness, abandon an acquired [conception of] self, But this is not asserted as the basis of ignorance.

Therefore, propounding that ignorance is thoroughly removed

Through knowing [such a] selflessness is very absurd.

# र्दे व र्र्स्च प्राप्त प्रमान क्षेत्र क्षेत

Question: In the statement by Nāgārjuna set forth above, in which he said that not being fabricated and not depending on another were the defining characteristics of *svabhāva*, was he speaking hypothetically or does such a *svabhāva* exist?

यदे वे केंब्राक्षक्षकार्यी केंब्राकेद्र केंब्राम्ब्रुद्वायादे त्यायदायवेष्ठ वे ब्रायविष्यायायेष्ठ हे यकेंब्राक्षकार्या केंब्रायवेष्ठ ।

[Answer.] This spoken of as the "reality of phenomena" is posited as the "nature" (svabhāva), and it is non-fabricated and does not depend on another.

## ने ने चें प्रने वहण वर्षेय यश

5

10

15

20

25

That it exists is established<sup>57</sup> along with a source from sūtra in Chandrakīrti's [Auto]commentary on the Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way":

खुन्यमन्तुः अर्दन्याद्वस्यायाने वृष्युदेशम्यावित्रः स्त्रीयान्येत् ग्रीसालया ग्रीसायलेसाया लेगा व्याप्ताते साले त

Does a nature, as asserted by the master [Nāgārjuna], that is qualified in such a way [as described in *Mūlamadhyamakakārikā*, XV.2, which Chandrakīrti has just cited] exist?

मदमी'द्रवद्द्र्यास्त्र्व्याचर्डेअ'ख्व'यद्व्याचीक्ष'दे'विष्युक्ष'यद्व्याचीक्ष्य'य्व्यास्त्र्यक्ष'चीः कॅक्ष'केद'यदे'वेशम्बक्ष'य'केद'र्दे'वेश्चस्यास्य सम्बद्ध्यायः केष्य'केद्रवेश्चःचीः यदेश्याचीः

The "reality" (*chos nyid, dharmatā*) extensively set forth by the Transcendent Lord—"Whether the Tathāgatas appear or not, the reality of phenomena just abides"—exists.

क्रॅंब'केट डेबानुप्त वदिष्य दें लेगा श्रेमाया क्रॅम्बाया वदि प्तामी स्टाय केवा वि

What is this "reality"? It is the nature of these eyes and so forth.

दे'द्रणाची'स्टायबित्रःष्यरःग्यादिवेगाचे'त्र। दे'द्रणाची'यर्चेश्वासासाधित'या'केद्र'द्रद्रणाबत्त'या'क्वेश्वायसेद्र्याचादिवेत्रायसेह्र्यस्यस्य स्वायति। विकायसेह्र्यस्यस्य स्वायति। विकायसेह्र्यस्यस्य स्वायति।

And, what is the nature of these? It is their non-fabricatedness, that which does not depend on another, their entity that is realized by knowledge free from the dimness of ignorance.

The verb "established" is at the end of the quote passage.

# 

Does it exist or not? If it did not exist, for what purpose would Bodhisattvas cultivate the path of the perfections?

न्यात्र मित्र मित

Why would Bodhisattvas initiate hundreds of difficulties for the sake of realizing reality?

र्देन् इन्हें संवस्त्राचन स्वतः स

Question: Did you not earlier refute the establishment of a nature with regard to all phenomena?

10 वरमी र्त्त्रेश्चर्यम्बर्धायाः श्रेव प्यते र्क्केश्चर्यस्थायाः स्टामी र्दे र्विश्वमुयायते स्टाप्यविव विद्यास्य स्थापार स्था

[Answer.] Have we not given many times the answer that, with regard to phenomena that are not internal mental imputations, a nature that is their establishment by way of their own entities does not exist, not even a particle?

Therefore, what need to speak about other phenomena [being established] as such natures (*svabhāva*). Even reality, the ultimate truth, is not in the least established [as such a nature].

#### প্র্যানাপ্রতালেপ্রা

5

For, Chandrakīrti's *Prasannapadā (Clear Words)* says:<sup>58</sup>

That which is the non-fabricated fundamental entity [abiding] ineluctably in fire even over the three times, that which is not the subsequent arising of something that did not arise previously, that which does not depend on causes and conditions like the heat of water or here and there or long and short, is called the "[final] nature".

20

25

This is commentary on XV.2.

## उःशेदिःसदःषीःदें दोःद्वःत्वः श्वादःश्वादः व्यादः विदः देशेदः देशेदः देशेदः देशेदः देशेदः देशेदः देशेदः देशेदः द

Does such a self-entity<sup>59</sup> of fire exist? By way of its own entity, it does not exist and also does not not exist.

# दे'ॡ'षेक्'र्येद'ग्री'र्देक्'ग्राद'क्क्'रा'र्ये'क्क्स्या'ग्री'श्चमा'य'श्चर'यम'ग्री'यदेशेम'श्चें'यहम्बाक्ष'ग्रीक्'र्हेय'हि'दें'र्षेद'र्दे'बेक्स' यहेंद्र'यम'ग्रीदें।

Though it is so, in order to dispel the fear of listeners, it is said upon imputation, "It exists conventionally."

## बेबारमायविदारेष्यमारमायीर्देश्वायुवायायग्यायव्यायाञ्चर्तास्त्रम् ।

Thus [Chandrakīrti] refutes that that nature is established by way of its own entity and says that it exists conventionally.

## ग्याफेरव्याप्त्रंतिःश्चर्याप्त्रं स्वराप्तरे द्वीराप्त्रं विकारम्बर्याप्त्रं स्वर्याप्त्रं स्वर्याप्त्रं स्वरं प्रवर्णे प्रवर्षे प्रवर्ये प्रवर्षे प्रवर्षे प्रवर्षे प्रवर्षे प्रवर्षे प्रवर्षे प्रवर्षे प्रवर्ये प्रवर्षे प्रवर्षे प्रवर्षे प्रवर्ये प्रवरं प्रवर्ये प्

[*Qualm:*] Since [Chandrakīrti] says that it is taught as existing upon imputation, in order to dispel the fear of listeners, [does this mean that Chandrakīrti] does not assert it as existing?

[Answer:] That is not reasonable, for other phenomena as well are said [to exist conventionally] upon imputation for a specific purpose, whereby [if svabhāva did not exist] they also would not exist.<sup>60</sup>

# र्वेदःतुःत्रदश्यःवःव्हरःदेवःदेःश्चेदःवःस्वर्श्वेदःदेवःश्चेदःतुःवव्यःवदेःवर्वेदःवःवर्वेदःवश्चात्रश्चेदः।

As cited earlier, [Chandrakīrti] established [that that nature exists] upon expressing the discredit that if that object did not exist, it would [absurdly] follow that pure behavior was senseless.

-

5

10

15

20

rang gi ngo bo, svarūpa.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>60</sup> In his rTsa shes tik chen (Ocean of Reasoning, Explanation of (Nāgārjuna's) "Fundamental Treatise on the Middle Way Called 'Wisdom'") rje tsong kha pa'i gsung dbu ma'i Ita ba'i skor edition, Vol.1,732 ff., Dzong-ka-ba, when explaining this point, cites a sūtra, the chos yang dag par sdud pa, that makes this same point with regard to production and cessation. He also cites a passage from the Samādhirājasūtra (King of Meditative Stabilizations Sūtra) which Chandrakīrti cites in the Prasannapadā immediately after making the point about such being said upon imputation in order to dispell the fears of listeners:

What hearing, what teaching is there

Of the inexpressible doctrine.

The inexpressible is heard and taught

Upon superimposition.

In this, the hearers, explainers, and doctrines to be explained are all said to be done upon superimposition. Thus for something to be said to exist "upon superimposition", need not imply that it is doesn't exist, like the superimposition of the two selves.

#### লম্বেইমাবের্বারাকারা

Also Chandrakīrti's [Auto]commentary on the Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way" says: 61

स्टायबेत्रादर्भत्ते क्षेत्र्यान् विष्णाक्ष्यान् विष्णाः विष्ण

## ५ वेशम्बुदशयदेःध्वेरःर्दे। ।

10

20

25

Not only does the master [Nāgārjuna] assert this nature, others also can be caused to assert it. Thus this nature is posited as established for both [parties of the debate].

## म्बन्द्र्र्द्र्द्र्र्स्यायदेः सुम्बाद्याः मुल्यायाः मुल्यायाः मुल्यायाः मुल्यायाः मुल्यायाः मुल्यायाः मुल्यायाः

Otherwise, one would have to assert that in the Mādhyamika system the attainment of release could not occur.

## *য়ु*ॱदत्रायश्चर्त्रश्चरार्चेचायात्ते सुदारद्श्वर्ते स्वाद्वर्त्त्रस्य सुत्राद्वर्त्त्रस्य स्व

For, the attainment of nirvāṇa is an actualization of nirvāṇa.

श्चरत्र्याने व्यवस्थाने व्यवस्थाने वास्त्राच्यत् । वास्त्राच । वास्त्राच्यत् । वास्त्राच्यत्यत् । वास्त्राच्यत् । वास्त्राच ।

That nirvāṇa is explained as a true cessation, and those [true cessations] are said to be ultimate truths and ultimate truths would not exist.

য়য়য়য়য়ৣয়য়য়য়৾[1] [648]

Chandrakīrti proves with great effort in his *Commentary on (Nāgārjuna's) "Sixty Stanzas on Reasoning"* that when nirvāna is attained the ultimate truth of cessation must be actualized.

## <u>दे.क्षेत्रः यश्चात्रात्ताः स्वात्तात्रात्त्रः तर्भाविश्वरः स्वात्त्रः स्वात्त्रः स्वात्त्रः स्वात्त्रः स्वात्तात्रः स्वात्त्रः स्वात्रः स्वात्त्रः स्वात्त्रः स्वात्त्रः स्वात्त्रः स्वात्त्रः स्वात्रः स्वात्त्रः स्वात्तः स्व</u>

Hence, these compounded phenomena, eyes and so forth, are not established as natures that are established by way of their own entities and are also not established as that [nature] when reality is posited as a [final] nature.

## क्रॅंबरकेर्त्यार्यस्यविवर्त्यात्ववार्यार्चेराष्यस्याश्चयाः

Thus, they are not established as either sort of nature.

This is commentary on VI.182 and follows shortly after the passage cited just above.

# रदःचित्तेव मदःतुत्रदः अःश्वादान्दः द्वाद्व प्यादे चित्तेव प्यादे क्षेत्रः क्षेत्रः भारत्यत्वेव प्यादे व्याद्व क्षेत्रः भारत्यत्व कष्त्रः भारत्यत्व क्षेत्रः भारत्यत्व क्षेत्रः भारत्यत्व कष्त्व क्षेत्रः भारत्यत्व कष्त्रः भारत्यत्व कष्त्य कष्त्रः भारत्यत्व कष्त्य भारत्यत्व कष्त्रः भारत्यत्व भारत्यत्व

Ultimate truths are established as that [final nature] when reality is posited as a [final] nature, but what establishes them as being such a [final] nature are their being non-fabricated and not depending on another.

## ५ म्बिस्यासी स्रिकाया से स्टामी देशे सामुनाय से स्टामिस स्टामि

They do not exist in the least as natures that are established by way of their own entities. Thus, they are merely established conventionally.

## चर्डेश्रायादीःश्चरायेत्राम्यार्तुःत्वुराचतेःव्यश्चायान्दाम्याव्यःस्त्रायादीःश्चामीवरायास्त्रायादी

"Fabricated" means "produced" in the sense of something that did not exist before arising newly, and "depend on another" means to depend on causes and conditions.

# याञ्चयाश्चर्ययाञ्चर्याश्चर्यात्र्यत्याञ्चर्यात् । याञ्चर्यात्र्याञ्चर्यात् । याञ्चर्यात्र्यात् । याञ्चर्यात् । याञ्चर्यत् । याञ्यत् । याञ्चर्यत् । याञ्चर्यत्यत् । याञ्चर्यत् । याञ्चर्यत् । याञ्चर्यत् । याञ्चर्यत् । याञ्चर्यत् । य

Because forms and so forth are not established as either type of nature, one cultivates the path in order to view that [final] nature in which reality is taken as "nature," whereby it is said that pure behavior [its basis] is not senseless.

# र्केश्वास्त्रश्रात्यात्रमात्री देश्याश्चायायत् स्टायाबीयात्राप्त्रमात्रमात्री स्वर्थात्रमात्रमात्री स्वर्थायाय विश्वासी स्वर्थायाय स्वर्थाय स्वर्थायाय स्वर्थायाय स्वर्थायाय स्वर्थायाय स्वर्थायाय स्वर्थाय स्वर्ये स्वर्थाय स्वर्थाय स्वर्थाय स्वर्थाय स्वर्ये स्वर्थाय स्वर्ये स्वर्थाय स्वर्थाय स्वर्ये स्वर्ये स्वर्ये स्वर्ये स्वर्थाय स्वर्ये स्

Moreover, it is explained that it is not contradictory not to assert in the least a nature that is established by way of its own entity of phenomena and to assert a nature adventitiously [that is, conventionally].

#### 20 বহুগ্রেশ্রাথ্যথা

10

15

25

Chandrakīrti's Madhaymakāvatārabhāṣya ([Auto]commentary on the Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way") says: 62

ॻॖऀॱয়ॱয়ॱয়ॱয়ॱয়ॱविषाॱॖॸॕॾॱॺॕॱॹॖॖॖॖॖड़ॱॿॸॖॱॻॖॖॸॱয়॓ॱढ़ॸॕॸॖॱॹॖॕॱय़ॖॖॖॖॸॱॸॖॖॱॻॐॾग़ॎऒॵढ़ॱय़ॱॸॖॸॹऻॿढ़ॱॺॱऄॕॣॾऻय़ॱय़॓ॸॖॱय़ढ़ऀॱॸॸ ॻॿऀढ़ॱॴॸॱढ़ॎॕॸॖॱय़ॱॿॖॕॎॸॖॱढ़ऀॱख़ढ़ॱख़ॖ॔ढ़ॱढ़ॺऻॴॸढ़ऀॱॸॕढ़ॱॻॾॕ॔ॸॖॱय़ॱॿऀॺऻॱॺॕॱॱ।

[Objection:] Alas, utterly wrong! You, who do not assert things (bhāva) at all but also assert a nature that adventitiously is non-fabricated and does not depend on another are expressing meanings that are patently contradictory.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>62</sup> This comes just before the passage from the same text cited by Dzong-ka-ba just above.

# चर्हेर्यम:नुःश्रे। हिंर्नीशयश्रुवःचर्डशानीःन्वेदशयःयःसन्वायःविवाःश्रेः

[Answer.] You in saying such do not understand the intent of [Nāgārjuna's] Mūlamadhyamakakārikā (Treatise on the Middle Way).

यदे-लि-नर्ग्दश्यान्ते-वायाने-श्रेषा-वार्श्वश्यान्त्रश्यान्यान्त्रश्यान्यान्त्रश्यान्त्रश्यान्त्रश्यान्त्रश्यान्त्रश्यान्यान्त्रश्यान्त्यान्त्रश्यान्यान्त्रश्यान्त्रश्यान्त्रश्यान्त्रश्यान्त्रश्यान्त्र

That intent is as follows: If the self-entity of eyes and so forth, dependent-arisings that are apprehensible by ordinary childish beings, were the nature of those, then because that nature is realizable even by the erroneous, pure behavior would be senseless.

# ष्यरणे स्वेरप्रदे केर्प्तरप्रवित्रस्य सेत्रपरिते स्वेरप्ते प्रम्भायते केत्रप्ताय स्क्वेर्प्तय स्क्वेरप्ताय स्क्वेरप्ताय स्क्वेरप्ताय स्क्वेरप्ताय स्क्वेरप्ताय स्क्वेरप्ताय स्क्वेरप्ताय स्क्वेरप्ताय स्व

Because just this [self-entity of eyes and so forth] is not the [final] nature, pure behavior for the sake of viewing that [final] nature is purposeful.

# देःषदःचद्वाःवीकात्मुदःर्ह्स्वःग्चीःचदेदःयःत्यःर्क्ष्र्रकाद्यकायर्छेकायःश्चेदःयःददःवाबदःत्यःश्चेःर्क्ष्रवायःकेदःदुःचर्हेदःद्वी ।

Further, I [Chandrakīrti] say that [this final nature] is, relative to conventional truths, non-fabricated and does not depend on another.

यादः बिया चिश्वायते श्रुः [649] व्यक्षायत् प्रायत् प्रायत् । याद्रायाः अवस्थितः विश्वायतः स्थितः विश्वायतः स्थायः विश्वायतः स्थायः स्यायः स्थायः स्य

#### নিখাশ্বাস্থ্যমার্থী।

5

10

15

20

25

Just that which is not something viewed by ordinary childish beings is suitable to be the nature, and due to just that, the ultimate is not a thing [that is, is not established by way of its own entity] and is also not a non-thing [that is, is not utterly non-existent] because it is naturally peaceful.

# 

Here "thing" and "non-thing" are, as explained before at the time of dualistic proposition [of *bhāva* and *abhāva*], existence by way of [an object's] own entity and utter non-existence. 63

The emptiness that is the emptiness of [inherent] nature (svabhāva), the determination that there does not

See pp.594-6 where Dzong-ka-ba discusses this topic. See, *DA & E*, pp.199ff.

10

15

20

exist in phenomena even a particle that is established as an [inherent] nature, or is established by way of its own entity, exists as an attribute of those phenomena, forms and so forth, which serve as substrata.

Thus, it is not contradictory that both those [that is, substrata and attribute] exist for one awareness. Further, since dualistic appearance has not been overcome, that emptiness is an imputed ultimate truth.

Through familiarizing with the view realizing the absence of an [inherent] nature, [or of inherent existence], that object [the emptiness of inherent existence] is realized directly. For that [consciousness], all mistaken appearances that are the appearance of inherent existence whereas there is no inherent existence are overcome.

Thus, since the consciousness actualizing that reality does not observe subjects such as forms, the two—such a reality and the subject—do not exist **for** that awareness.

## रे'माकैश्वर्केश'केर'रदर्केश'ठव'र्'त्य्हेंग'दा'वे'श'श्वर्'प्रादे'त्र्वें'मावव 'वेग'मी देश'वश्वरापवग'रमेंश'शें। ।

Thus, the positing of those two as reality and subject must be posited from the viewpoint of some other conventional awareness.

In that case, an ultimate truth is posited with regard to the mere vanishing of all elaborations of mistaken appearances which involve the appearance of inherent existence, whereas there is none, in addition to the pacification of all elaborations of establishment by way of [an object's] own entity.

## दे विश्वासुद्रशामुद्राप्तराची दे विश्वासुद्राप्तरी सद्याय स्वित्र विश्वास सुद्राचा सद्या स्वाप्त स्व

Thus, although that is asserted, how could it be necessary to assert a nature that is established by way of its own entity!

#### প্র্যান্থার্থান্থর শুদ্রা

न्द्रंश्चर्यदेः इत्यायात्राः देवान्यत्यः द्वान्यः व्यान्त्रः व्यान्यः विष्यान्यः विष्यः विष्यः विष्यः विष्यः व यात्राः देवान्यदेः द्वान्यः व्याद्वान्त्रः विष्यः विष्यः विष्यः विष्यः विष्यः विष्यः विषयः विषयः विषयः विषयः व

#### वेशप्रमा

5 Chandrakīrti's *Prasannapadā (Clear Words)* says:<sup>64</sup>

That aspect of things that is observed due to the power of the dimness of sight of ignorance in the manner of non-perception [by ordinary beings] by its nature becomes the object of Noble Ones, who are free from the dimness of ignorance. That very entity is posited as the [final] nature of those [things].

र्देश्यं द्वार्यः द्वार्यः वित्रः वित

## वेशमञ्जूदशः श्री।

Also:65

10

15

20

25

The lack of inherently existent production of things, due to its not being anything [demonstrable as it appears to a direct perceiver] is just a non-thing, whereby because its entity does not exist, it does not exist as an [inherent] nature of things.

म्दर्म द्वार्यक्ष प्रति विश्व विष्य विश्व विष्य विश्व विश्व

Some [Tibetans] do not posit the ultimate truth as the mere elimination of the elaborations of the object to be negated, the two selves and so forth.

Rather, they assert that it appears in the manner of being established under its own power as the object of a non-mistaken awareness realizing the mode of being, like the way in which blue and yellow and so forth [appear to the mind as separate substantial entities], and ascertaining that it exists in that way is the view realizing the profound meaning.

This is commentary on XV.2.

This continues almost immediately from the preceding passage.

10

15

20

# 

Further, they assert that the realization that these external and internal phenomena that are the bases with regard to which living beings adhere to the two selves are without inherent existence is a place for going wrong with regard to the correct view.

## वेगायाके हुरागी ग्रह्मरास्यावस्य उत्रायका द्वीर्से यातृ शुराया धेताते।

These assertions are outside the sphere of all the scriptures, Hınayāna and Mahāyāna.

# 

For, they assert that it is necessary to overcome the conception of self, the root that binds all living beings in cyclic existence.

# देश्रायन्त्राः हुःयञ्चरायदेः त्राबि दो स्टायबिवा सेन्यसः हें त्राश्चायसः दे से श्रिक्षायसः दे दिन्य स्वेत्यः सेन् श्री केंश्रात्राव्य स्वेत्रः स्वेत्यः सेन्यसः स्वेत्यः सेन्यसः स

And, they then assert that that conception of self is not overcome through realizing those bases which are apprehended by it as a self as without inherent existence, but rather is overcome through realizing some other phenomenon that is unrelated with it as truly existent.

यदे ने दियम् न । व्यक्षित्र न अप्ता मुला से दिवाद प्रत्य प्रत्य

This does not appear to be the least bit different from saying, in order to overcome the distress of someone who, even though there is no snake in the east, perceives one there, fears it, and is distressed, "You cannot overcome the conception of a snake through thinking, 'There is not in the least a snake in the east.' Rather you should think, 'There is a tree in the west.' Through that, you will overcome your perception of a snake and your distress."

ने देन त्र का श्रीन त्यारे श्रु का र्रेत प्रत्या में का की ते त्या प्रत्या ने श्रु न स्वाय का व्यव का व्यव का व्यव का व्यव का श्रु न स्वाय का का की न स्वाय की न

Hence, those who wish the good for themselves should put far away such [wrong views]. Relying on the texts of the Superior Nāgārjuna and his spiritual sons which set forth clearly the vast collections of reasonings that establish deep ascertainment of the scriptures of definitive meaning, the method for eradicating the mode of apprehension of ignorance that is the root of all difficulties binding one in cyclic existence, and which [show] that the meaning of those [scriptures] is not suitable to be interpreted otherwise, you should cross to the other side of the ocean of cyclic existence.

न्यायाः चुःत्यः त्यायाः क्षेत्राः त्यायाः क्षेत्रः व्यायाः क्षेत्रः व्यायाः क्षेत्रः व्यायाः वित्रः क्षेत्रः व भवः वित्रः व

Because the refutation of wrong ideas with regard to the object to be negated is a great key to eliminating places where one might go wrong in gaining the Mādhyamika view, I have explained it here at length.

## [Chapter 13. The Actual Object to be Negated]

मञ्ज्यायाः स्टाल्यम् साम्चीः द्रमामा मुद्रास्य स्वाद्यायाः मञ्जूषा । द्रदेशः मुद्रीः द्वाद्यायाः स्वाद्यायाः स्वत्यायाः स्वाद्यायाः स्वाद्यायः स्वत्यायः स्वत

[3/3] Third, Identifying The Object To Be Negated In Our Own System<sup>66</sup>

This has three parts: the actual identification of the object to be negated; how that [object to be negated] is or is not affixed to other objects to be negated; and an explanation of whether or not the qualification "ultimately" needs to be affixed to the object to be negated.

# ५८<sup>-</sup>द्रा है। है रूप्त्रामा नुः प्रायमा निः प्रायम निः प्रायमा निः प्रायम निः

[1/3] First, The Actual Identification Of The Object Of Negation

In general, with regard to objects to be negated, there are objects to be negated by the path and objects to be negated by reasoning.

### **ने**'य'न्न'र्से'वे'न्तुस्यम्यवदःयस्।

क्रिंब स्थाय थी हीय या दरा।

नेबानुदे ब्रीयाय केन तु पक्ष्रा।

नेरके क्षेत्रया वस्र अरु दि।

दे बद्द्वका वे वें वाय कर वें द्वा

#### डेशम्बुद्रश्याकृत्र

15

20

Regarding to the first of these, Maitreya's *Madhyāntavibhanga* (Differentiation of the Middle Way and the Extremes, II.17) says:

There is teaching of afflictive

Obscuration and cognitive obscuration.

We assert that all obscurations are [included] in these,

And when they are extinguished, one is released.

## वृष्ट्रास्यायान्दरानेश्चानुदेःश्चीयायामविशार्शे।

Thus, there are the two—afflictive obscurations and cognitive obscurations.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>66</sup> This is the third part of a topic entiteled "Identifying the object to be negated by reasoning," that began on 579.13.

These are objects to be negated that exist among objects of knowledge, for if these did not exist, all embodied beings would [absurdly] without exertion be released [from cyclic existence].

## रेग्रायदे'न्ग्र्गामु'ते। ईन्:र्ह्ह्याप्यश्

With regard to objects to be negated by reasoning, Nāgārjuna's *Vigrahavyāvartanı* (*Refutation of Objections*, stanza 27) says:

त्त्र्यातः द्वेषाः श्रुत्यः यः त्यो । स्त्रः स्त्रेरः त्यः द्वेरः स्त्रः स्त्रः स्त्रः स्त्रः । स्त्रातः द्वेरः त्यः स्त्रः स्त्रः स्त्रः स्त्रः । स्त्रातः स्त्रः त्यः स्त्रः स्त्र

Someone thinks that an emanated

Woman is a woman.

The occurrence of such a wrong conception is stopped

By another emanation. This is like that.

## 15 वेशयदे स्टाद्येयायश

10

20

25

Commenting on that, his Vigrahavyavārtinivrtti (Commentary on the "Refutation of Objections") says:

त्र त्र्यूरर्भे । । त्र त्र्यूरर्भे । वर्षेत्र त्र त्रेत्र त्र त्रेत्र त्र त्रेत्र त्र त्रेत्र त्र त्रेत्र त्र

A woman emanated by some being is empty of the nature [of being a woman], but [someone else] wrongly conceives, "This is ultimately a woman."

देवे ख्री र दे लेंग पर वहें दाय देश वहें दा क्र महार वहीं दाया

Therefore, due to that wrong conception, desire is generated.

देन्यत्वेत्रः मनिषात्रः यत्यादे वित्यानिषात्रायते अतः वित्रः श्रीत्रः श्रीत्रः श्रीत्रः श्रीतः श्रीतः स्वाप्तः स्वापतः स्वापतः

A Tathāgata or a Śrāvaka of the Tathāgata emanates another emanation, and it overcomes that [person's] wrong conception.

# दे'चबैब'तु'दरि'क्वेषा'र्श्वेद'यम्बुत्य'य'त्र्यस्व प्याप्तेद्वायं वस्य अउद्याप्य स्वित् स्वेद्वायां श्रुत्य स्व य'द्वा'त्य'स्ट'चबैव'र्षेद्व'यस्य स्वेद्वायां याद्वेव स्वाप्ते स्वत्य स्वेद्वायां वस्त्र स्वेद्वायां स्वत्य स्व

#### वेशमञ्जूदश्यायः सूर्

5

10

15

Similarly, my words, which are empty like an emanation, overcome that which is an apprehension with regard to all things—which, like an emanated women, are empty and do not inherently exist—that they exist inherently.

# ष्ट्रीत 'के' व्यं मा मी' वर्षेत्र 'य' व्या 'वि52] 'न्या मा गुरुषा या प्राप्त प्रापत प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्र प्राप्त प्र प्र

Thus [Nāgārjuna] speaks of an erroneous conception as an object to be negated and also treats the inherent existence that it apprehends as an object to be negated, [making] two [objects to be negated].

## र्देव गुर द्वावा चुदे वार्ड चें चें चे खे अप्येव है।

However, the primary object to be negated is the latter.

## 

For, in order to overcome an erroneous subject [i.e., a consciousness], one must initially refute the object that it apprehends.

For instance, one refutes inherent existence, that is, establishment by way of [an object's] own entity, in terms of persons and phenomena due to their being dependent-arisings.

# न्यायाः चः तद्देः त्रेः त्रे काः चः त्याः क्षेत्रः त्यां क्षाः त्रे व्याः व्याः

This object to be negated **must** be one that **does not exist** among objects of knowledge because if it did exist, it could not be refuted.

## देःभ्रःषीतःत्रदर्धादःचरःदिद्वःचदेःक्वेंदिर्वात्रःक्वेःचत्रान्वाताःदर्वात्रात्या

Even so [that is, even though it does not exist], because mistaken superimpositions that apprehend it to exist are generated, it must be refuted.

## 25 दर्गेषा'यदर वें प्रश्राम्य प्राप्त विषाया स्थान स्य

This refutation is not like destroying a pot with a hammer, but rather is a case of generating an ascertaining consciousness that recognizes the non-existent to be non-existent.

## बेद्रायम्देशयाञ्चेशवार्षेद्रायमात्रहेत्रयदेश्वत्य्वेशर्वेगायाणेत्रार्वे। ।

When one generates ascertainment of it as non-existent, the mistaken consciousness apprehending that it exists will be overcome.

# दे'चित्तेत्र'तुःदेग्राह्मप्यस्यम् वृत्त्यत्यः स्वेत् ग्रीह्माश्चात्यः स्वेत् ग्रीह्

Similarly, establishing something with reasoning is not a case of the new establishment of something that formerly did not exist, like the production of a sprout by a seed, but rather is the generation of an ascertaining consciousness that recognizes a phenomenon as it is.

### र्रें ५ ह्वेंग यश्यारा

5

10

25

क्ष्माः अद्गयम् यद्यः अद्गयः विष्यः यद्यः विष्यः यद्यः विष्यः यद्यः विष्यः यद्यः विष्यः यद्यः विष्यः यद्यः विषयः विषयः यद्यः विषयः विषयः यद्यः विषयः विषयः यद्यः विषयः यद्य

### बेशमञ्जूदशःविदा

Nāgārjuna's Vigrahavyāvartanı (Refutation of Objections, stanza 65) says:<sup>67</sup>

[What use] is there to establish a negative Of that which is non-existent even without words? To [answer] that, the words, "does not exist" Cause understanding, they do not eliminate.

#### 20 देवे स्टारम् वाया स्थाप्ता

[Nāgārjuna's] Vigrahavyavārtinivrtti (Commentary on the "Refutation of Objections) says:

हुँ ५ मुझ्याक्षेत्र १ त्या स्थान १ स्

[Qualm:] If you are establishing a negation of something that is non-existent even without words, that is, separate from any words, then what is the use of your words, "All things are without inherent existence"?

Dzong-ka-ba cites the verse as it is found in Nāgārjuna's commentary, P5232, vol. 95, 63.4.8.

10

15

20

25

*Answer*: The words, "All things are without inherent existence," do not make an inherent existence of things non-existent, but they do cause someone to understand with regard to that which is without inherent existence, "These things are without inherent existence."

न्ये स्व। यगयः वेषाः वः सः भ्रद्धाः चैवः विश्वावः श्रेनः यविवः नुः भ्रद्धाः चैवः विश्वावः व्यन्तः विश्वावः व्य वः से श्रेनः नुः वेद्यावेदः विश्वावः से प्रदेशः चैवः विश्वावः व्यन्तः विश्वावः व्यवः विश्वावः व्यवः विश्वावः व

For example, even though Devadatta is not in the house, someone says, "Devadatta is in the house." Someone else, in order to [cause understanding] that [Devadatta] is not there says, "[Devadatta] is not there."

ळेंगः[653] देशः भ्रूशः च्चेतः से दःयमः से खेदः यमः से खेदः यो अस्य च्चेतः खिस्रात्रः से श्रीदः यमः स्र्रेतः या यमयः लेगाः हः वर्षाः वर्षाः से

Those words do not cause Devadatta not to be there, but merely indicate the fact that Devadatta is not in the house.

दे प्राचीत्र दुः दूर्देश या इस्मान हो। या सामित्र की।

Similarly, the words, "Things are without inherent existence" do not cause an inherent existence of things not to exist.

However, because beings are confused with regard to the lack of a correct entity of all things, which are without inherent existence, like beings [emanated by] a magician, they [need] to be caused to understand that there is no inherent existence in those things that childish beings, due to the confusion of ignorance, mistakenly superimpose as having inherent existence.

देःयः स्टायत्वेदः स्प्रिंदः यः स्राधेदः दः स्वेषः स्रोदः यद्दः स्वेषः स्वायः स्वयः स्वयः स्वयः स्वयः स्वयः स्व स्वयः स्वायः स्वयः स स्वयः स्

Therefore, this which you are propounding—that if there is no inherent existence, of what use are the words, "There is no inherent existence," in that things would be established as without inherent existence even without any words, that is, separate from any words—is not reasonable.

### वेशम्बर्यायमःमञ्जूदश्यायःसूरम्वेशयमःगुर्दे।।

5

10

15

20

25

30

You should understand in accordance with this very clear statement.

Therefore, the assertion that a great deal of analysis with the reasonings of refutation and proof is a wandering in mere conventional words since [all phenomena] are devoid of refutation and proof in that, if something exists, it cannot be refuted, and, if it does not exist, it need not be refuted, is a propounding of nonsense that is a collection of contradictions without even an image of [the meaning of] refutation and proof by reasoning and by the path appearing [to the mind].

रद्यीश्वास्त्रित्त्वत्याम् श्चीत्र्वाद्याद्याः स्वाद्याः स्वीत्राद्याः स्वाद्याः स्वत्याः स्वाद्याः स्वत्याः स्वाद्याः स्वाद्याः स्वाद्याः स्वाद्

This is because while you yourself are refuting an opponent's use of analysis involving refutation and proof, citing as your reason, "If something exists, it cannot be refuted, and if it does not exist, it need not be refuted," you are asserting that refutation and proof should not be done.

Further, it is not reasonable that the reason stated by you—[that if something exists, it cannot be refuted, and if it does not exist, it need not be refuted]—refute an opponent who asserts that actions of refutation and proof are necessary because [according to you] if something exists, it cannot be refuted, and if it does not exist, it need not be refuted.

द्रवाश्वादान्त्रः प्रश्नाद्रश्चित्रः द्वेत्वाद्याः वित्तः वित्तः वित्तः वित्तः वित्तः वित्तः वित्तः वित्तः वित देवाश्वादान्त्रः प्रश्नाद्याः वित्तः वित

**Refutation** with excellent reasoning is for the sake of overcoming erroneous mistaken conceptions, and **proof** with reasoning is a technique for generating non-erroneous ascertainment.

धुवि के त्यें मानी र्त्ते : श्रू व्यें माय स्वर्ते द्राया दरा धुवि के अग्यें माय से र्त्ते : या स्वर्ते द्राया स्वर्ते : या स्वर्ते :

Therefore, those wishing to overcome the various erroneous awarenesses and generate the various non-erroneous awarenesses should follow after the collections of reasonings [set forth] by Nāgārjuna and so forth and generate an awareness that ascertains refutation and proof non-erroneously.

10

20

25

दे'ॡर-रेग्र्यायाद्वस्थात्रीकार्य्यापात्रीक्षेत्रकेर्याम्भीत्रित्रक्ष्यात्रीत्र्यात्रीत्र्यात्रीत्रक्ष्यात्रीत् स्वीर-प्येत्रत्रह्में हे'रद्रित्वम्मी'रद्देत्रसूदस्यात्री'स्युत्यार्थम्यास्यस्युत्यस्यीत्र स्वीत्याप्येत्रक्षेत्

[*Question*:] If, in this way, refutation through reasoning is in order to generate non-erroneous ascertainment by way of eradicating erroneous modes of apprehension, what sort of awareness is it the object of the mode of apprehension of which is to be eradicated with reasoning?

ક્ર્રીઋત્વાવાનું તે દેવાયતે દેવાયા ત્યાયા અલવ ત્યાયા લેવા ભૂત ની માર્જી તે ત્રાસ્ત્રી તે ત્રાસ્ત્રી તે ત્રાસ્ત્ર ભુષ્ઠ ત્યાનું ત્યાવાના ત્રાસ્ત્ર ત્યાનું ત્રાસ્ત્ર ત્યાનું ત્રાસ્ત્ર ત્યાનું ત્રાસ્ત્ર ત્યાનું ત્રાસ્ત્ર ત્યાન ભુષ્ઠ ત્યાનું ત્યાનું ત્રાસ્ત્ર ત્યાનું ત્રાસ્ત્ર ત્યાનું ત્રાસ્ત્ર ત્યાનું ત્યાનુ

[Answer:] Although there are, in general, limitless conceptual consciousnesses apprehending the object to be negated, you should identify well the erroneous conceptual consciousness that is the root of all faults and defects and eradicate its referent object.

देःलॅग्'व'के**रा**र्श्चेव'वस्रकाउदःक्ष्मि'यर त्युर प्रते धुर रे।

For, if that is overcome, all faults and defects will be overcome.

देःलट्राय्त्रें द्राक्ष्मश्चायां श्वायाः माल्याः माल्याः माल्याः माल्याः माल्याः माल्याः माल्याः माल्याः माल्य स्वराद्याः माल्याः माल्या

Moreover, the antidotes set forth [by the Buddha] for other [afflictions], desire, and so forth, are antidotes for [only] a portion [of the afflictions], whereas the antidotes set forth for ignorance are antidotes to all [afflictions].

য়<sup>৽</sup>ঽয়৽য়৾ঀৢ৾য়৽য়ৣ৾৾ঀ৽য়য়য়৽ড়ৼ৽য়ৣ৾৽য়৻ঀ৾৽ড়ঀ৽ঢ়ৢ৾। য়য়য়৸য়য়৸য়য়

Therefore, ignorance is the basis of all faults and defects. Chandrakīrti's Prasannapadā (Clear Words) says:

In the nine aspects of the Buddha's teachings based on the two truths—the sets of sūtras and so forth,

दहिना हेत ह्र अर्था ग्री हेंबु र रिंस क्वा के नार विना दिन स्वी प्यर दिना ना विवास

Proclaiming correctly greatly vast [antidotes] corresponding to the deeds of worldly beings,

देरके तर्दे दाक्षणकायकाया क्षेरणा क्षुरकायका ले स्ट्रा च दारा चे दाकी रामित

Those spoken to clear away desire do not extinguish hatred,

# ले'ब्र्दाचब्रायान्य नुष्ट्वीराम्ब्रुद्वायवागुद्वी तर्देद् क्षम्बाच्य स्यानुद्वी द्वार्या स्वीत्रात्वी ।

Those spoken to clear away hatred do not extinguish desire,

## यदःवियादःकुत्यःश्रेयाश्वाच्यःचदःचुःधुरःयाश्चादश्वादःदेशःग्रादःदेशःयाववतःश्वेरवर्देशशा

And those spoken to extinguish pride and so forth do not vanquish other defilements.

## <u>देख्रिस्ते के अपञ्चता अपभिवास अद्भार्त्ते प्रमार्थे के अधिका अवा</u>

Therefore, they are not very pervasive, and those scriptures are not of great meaning.

## गिने सुगा बन्य र प्राची र गासुरसाय गाम धिन ने साने केंन्से र साम खुसाय हैं समा

Those spoken to extinguish bewilderment vanquish all afflictions;

#### लेशक्षा

5

10

15

20

25

The Conqueror said that all afflictions thoroughly depend upon ignorance.

## र्दे व महि सुग दे है यद विग धेव ऋसा व

What is this bewilderment [or ignorance] like?

# ૄૹ૾ૢૺ<sup>૽</sup>ૡઽૻઌ૽૾ૺ૽ૹૼૹૡ૱ૹૻૻ૱ઽઌ૽૾ૺૺ૱ૹ૽૽ૢ૱૽ૹ૽૽ૣ૽૱૽ૡ૱ૡ૽ૺ૱૽ૹ૽૽ૼઌૺ૱ઌઌ૽૽ૡ૽૽ૡ૽૽૱ૹ૽૽ૢ૽ૺઌ૽૽ૼઌૹૻ૽ઌ૽૽ૡ૽ૺ૽૽ૢૼ૽ૡૺ૱ૹ૽૽ૺઌ૽૽૱ઌ૽૽૱ૹ૽૽ૺ

That awareness which mistakenly superimposes inherent existence, which apprehends internal and external phenomena to be established by way of their own characteristic natures, is, on this occasion, ignorance.

## বৰীবর্মুঘর [655] বেশী অমা অশা

Chandrakīrti's Bodhisattvayogācāracatuḥśatakaṭıkā (Commentary on (Āryadeva's) "Four Hundred") says:

द्यायम् भेषायम् द्वायम् प्रत्यायम् प्रत्यायम् प्रत्यायम् भूष्यायम् भूष्यम् भूष्

It is posited that, through the force of afflicted non-knowing, a consciousness which mistakenly superimposes [an establishment] by way of their own entities of things, one comes to possess attachment to things. From stopping in all ways that which is the seed of entering into cyclic existence, cyclic existence is overcome.

## बेश्राम्ब्रुव्यायते द्वीराम्बर्गा

In order to indicate this, [Āryadeva's Catuḥśataka (Four Hundred, XIV.25)] says:<sup>68</sup>

The seed of cyclic existence is a consciousness;

Objects are its sphere of activity.

When one sees selflessness in objects,

The seeds of cyclic existence are stopped.

દે ઋંત્ વત્ ત્રુપ્ત શું અજ્ઞા અપ્તા ત્રું મું વત્ પ્રસ્તા ત્રુપ્ત સ્ત્રુપ્ત સ્ત્રુપત્ર સ્ત્રુપ્ત સ્ત્રુપત્ર સ્ત્ર સ્ત્રુપત્ર સ્ત્ર સ્ત્રુપત્ર સ્ત્રુપત્ર સ્ત્રુપત્ર સ્ત્રુપત્ર સ્ત્રુપત્ર સ્ત્ર સ્ત્

## ন্বৈশ্বস্থ্যস্থ্য

5

10

15

20

25

Hence, it is asserted that from overcoming in all ways the consciousness that is the cause of attachment, the seed of cyclic existence, by means of seeing objects as without inherent existence, cyclic existence is overcome for Śrāvakas, Pratyekabuddhas, and Bodhisattvas who have attained forbearance with regard to the doctrine of non-production.

## ने केन यने व त्र हैं व विश्वायत्र पीव है।

योहे.श्रेय.प्र्यंत्रात्यः व्याप्त्रं प्रात्यः प्रश्नितः । दे.ह्येत्रः श्रेयः व्याप्त्रं प्रात्यः व्याप्तः प्रात्यः । स्राप्तः प्राप्तः प्रापतः प्राप्तः प्रापतः प्राप्तः प्राप्तः प्राप्तः प्राप्तः प्रापतः प्राप्तः प्राप्तः प्राप्तः प्राप्तः प्राप्तः प्राप्तः प्राप्तः प्राप्तः प्रापतः प्राप्तः प्राप्तः प्राप्तः प्राप्तः प्राप्तः प्राप्तः प्रापतः प्रापतः प्राप्तः प्राप्तः प्राप्तः प्रापतः प्राप्तः प्रापतः प्रापतः

[Ignorance] is also called the conception of true existence. For [Āryadeva's *Catuḥśataka (Four Hundred*, VI.10)] says:<sup>69</sup>

Just as the physical sense power [pervades] the body, Bewilderment abides in all. Therefore, through destroying bewilderment All afflictions will also be destroyed.

69 See Lang, pp.66-67.

\_

<sup>68</sup> See Lang, pp.134-5.

## बेश्यदे प्रबे प्रमु प्रदे द मे वापाय विश्व

Commenting on this verse, Chandrakīrti's *Bodhisattvayogācāracatuḥśatakatıkā* (Commentary on (Āryadeva's) "Four Hundred") says:

यहिःस्यादिःनेद्वस्यादिःस्यादिवःप्याद्वेतःप्याद्वेतःप्याद्वेतःप्याद्वेतःस्यादःकृतःस्यादःकृतःस्यादःवितःप्रदेवःपदेतःपदेवःपदेवःपदेवःपदः क्वेंव्यदेवासःप्यादःस्याहःत्वह्वार्योः

### लेशक्षा ।

5

10

15

20

25

Because bewilderment is confused with regard to those [things] due to conceiving them to be true in accordance with how [they appear], it engages in mistakenly superimposing on things a self-entity that is true.

रे ॱक्ष्रम्यः भेषायात्वर्षम्यत्वे स्वाधितः त्व। तह्षायात् स्विषायात् स्विषायात् । तहिषायात् । तहिषायात् । वहिष त्वापिक्षायात्रे स्वायात्वर्षे स्वायात्वर्षे स्वायात्वर्षे स्वायात्वर्षे स्वायात्वर्षे स्वायात्वर्षे स्वायात्व

[Qualm:] If, in this way, ignorance is the root of cyclic existence, then it would be incorrect [for Chandrakīrti] to explain in the *Madhyamakāvatāra* (Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way") and in the Prasannapadā (Clear Words) that the view of the perishing aggregates [as I and mine] is the root of cyclic existence because there are not two primary causes [or roots, of cyclic existence].

## 

[Answer.] With regard to the mode of assertion of ignorance and the view of the perishing aggregates [as I and mine], I have already explained the assertions of other masters at the point of [explaining the practices] of a person of medium capacity.

## दर्ने रःश्चें यः न्यें तः श्चायायायायाये या बेन या वी

Therefore, here [I will explain] the assertions of the master Chandrakīrti:

न्तुः सप्यामान्त्रव्यस्य स्वित्रः स्त्रीयः हुः यत्ते न्यतः न्यतः यदेव ययः यदेव ययः विष्यः स्वितः यात्रे न्याः विष्यः विवाधि विषयः विवाधि विवाधि विषयः विवाधि विवा

That conception of a true existence of things which other Mādhyamikas assert to be a cognitive obscuration, he asserts to be ignorance and, moreover, asserts it to be afflicted ignorance.

# য়ৄ৴ৼৢ৴য়য়য়ড়ৢ৴য়ঀৢয়য়ৢয়য়য়য়য়ৢয়য়য়য়য়ড়ৢয়য়য়ড়য়ৼৢ৻[656]য়ঀঀৼড়ৼ৻

For, as cited earlier, <sup>70</sup> it is explained in his *Bodhisattvayogācāracatuḥśatakaṭıkā* (*Commentary on (Āryadeva's)* "*Four Hundred*") as afflicted.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>70</sup> See above, where Chandrakīrti, in commentary on XIV.25, uses the term, "afflicted non-knowing".

### तह्यात्रम्थात्यश्रामुद्रा

Also, his [Auto]commentary on the Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way" says:71

Because this [ignorance] causes sentient beings to be confused with regard to viewing the actual nature of things, it is [called] bewilderment;

ignorance mistakenly superimposes an existence of things by way of their own entities that they do not have; it has a nature of obscuring perception of the nature [of things]. It is a concealer.

#### 10 南本でなり

5

देश्वरावर्षित्रावर्षित्राचित्राचित्राच्यात्र्वेत्राचित्राच्यात्र्वेत्राचित्राच्यात्र्वेत्राचित्राच्यात्र्वेत् चित्राचित

Also:72

15

20

25

Thus, truths for a concealer (*samvṛtisatya*) are posited through the force of the afflicted ignorance that is included within the [twelve] links of [the dependent-arising of] cyclic existence.

## बेश्राहेत्रत्रेयायञ्चात्रेश्राण्चीः यव त्यमान्दर्ये रायम्दायश्वात्रं व्यवस्थात्रं व्यवस्थात्रं स्थायम् विश्वा

Thus, because [Chandrakīrti] explains that [ignorance] is the first of the twelve links of dependent-arising, it is an affliction and not a cognitive obscuration.

To what do the cognitive obscurations refer? This will be explained below.

देश्वात्राय्यत्रायत्रुः गृहेश्वात्त्रीः द्राय्येत्राय्यायत् । याद्रिः याद्रीः याद्

Therefore, within it being the case that the ignorance which is the first of the twelve links is the root of cyclic existence, it is also explained that the view of the perishing aggregates [as I and mine] is the root of cyclic existence. Since ignorance is the **generality** and the view of the perishing aggregates [as I and mine] is its **instance**, there is no contradiction.

This is commentary on VI.28.

This is still commentary on VI.28.

# दे.जाः अर्थाः प्रत्याः विर्मेषाः प्रतिः चर्त्तेषाः स्त्रिष्याः स्वायाः स्वयाः स्वयाः स्वयः स

With regard to this, ignorance is the opposite of knowledge, and this does not refer to just any knowledge, but to the wisdom that knows the reality that is selflessness.

## ५ देते पर्ज्ञे मार्चे महाने सेहार पर्वे प्राप्त के प्राप्त प्राप्त के प्राप्त

The opposite of that [knowledge] is not suitable to be the mere non-existence of that wisdom or merely something other than it; therefore, it is the conception of [that wisdom's] contradictory equivalent.<sup>73</sup>

# देवे प्यत्वा हुः क्वें त्वे प्याप्त विवाद क्वें क्षा क्वे प्याप्त क्वें क्षा क्वे प्याप्त क्वें विवाद क्षा क्वे प्याप्त क्वें विवाद क्षा क्वें प्याप्त क्वें क्वें प्राप्त क्वें क्वें प्राप्त क्वें क्वें प्राप्त क्वें क्वें प्राप्त क्वें क्

That is the mistaken superimposition of self, and since there are two [types of] mistaken superimpositions—of a self of phenomena and of a self of persons—both the conception of a self of persons and the conception of a self of phenomena are ignorance.

## 

Therefore, when it is indicated that the view of the perishing aggregates [as I and mine] is the root of all other afflictions, it is not that ignorance is not indicated as the root.

देश्चेत्रस्य स्वरं स

10

15

20

25

## डेबार्ळेबाग्री'प्रद्यापृष्टेर्केटबापियाप्याप्याप्याचायापी'प्रद्यापृष्टेर्केटबापिये क्रुप्राप्यक्षेत्रापात्र

Also when [Nāgārjuna in his Ratnāvalı, (Precious Garland, 35ab)] says,

As long as one conceives the aggregates [to be inherently existent], so long does one conceive an [inherently existent] I with regard to them<sup>74</sup>

indicating that the ignorance that is a confusion with regard to a self of phenomena is the cause of confusion with regard to a self of persons,

## अ<sup>-</sup>देग्'यदे'त्रदः रूत्यावेशः कुः दन्न अः अः दर्गेः रहेतः क्रेंतः यशः त्रा

since he is indicating that the two internal divisions of ignorance are in a relationship of cause and effect, ...

In other words, an ignorant consciousness must be conceiving something that is directly contradictory with, or the opposite of, that which is apprehended by wisdom. Since the highest wisdom is realizing selflessness, or non-inherent existence, the ignorance that it overcomes must be conceiving the opposite of that, i.e., self, or inherent existence.

Dzong-ka-ba also cited this earlier, 577.7-8, see p.172 *DA and E*.

## ଦहिषाःभ्रःसः भेषाःचः त्यस्य वावतः [657] यदैः वेत्रं तस्य यः वस्य सः उन् ग्रीः इः च मः चस्रुतः यः यः यवायः चसेन् ने ।

...this does not contradict the teaching that the view of the perishing aggregates [as I and mine] is the root of all afflictions other than ignorance.

If one does not know to explain in this way the intent of the master [Chandrakīrti], it is very difficult to dispel the contradiction that two roots of cyclic existence have been explained.

# <u>दे.के.विद्यान्त्राचात्र्यात्र्यात्र्यात्राच्</u>

This system of identifying ignorance is also the assertion of the protector Nāgārjuna.

## क्रॅंटरवेद्र'यतुब्र'इ'य'यश्र

10

15

20

25

कु: ५८: क्रेंब्र : यक्षा अ: ६ व्या क्ष : व्या वि: यक्ष : यक्ष :

For, the Śūnyatāsaptati (Seventy Stanzas on Emptiness, stanzas 64-65) says:<sup>75</sup>

The Teacher said that that which conceives

Things produced from causes

And conditions as real is ignorance.

From it, the twelve links arise.

त्रिक्षाः स्वाधिकः प्रतिकार्ष्ये स्वाधिकः स्वाध

#### উষাশাস্ত্রদক্ষাশীনা

Knowing well that things are empty because of seeing

The real, ignorance does not arise.

That is the cessation of ignorance

Whereby the twelve links cease.

Dzong-ka-ba appears to be working from a different translation.

## इप्नेदेप्यान्त्रेन्द्रम्यायस्य

5

10

15

25

Also, the twenty-sixty chapter of Nāgārjuna's *Mūlamadhyamikakārika* (*Treatise on the Middle Way,* XXVI.11-12) says:

चेत्रायत्रादेःकृट्यक्क्ष्यत्रयःक्ष्री । यद्भिद्विद्वयत्रात्र्यत्रयः त्युद्धः त्युद्धाः । यद्भिद्धाः त्यावात्रयः युद्धः त्युद्धाः । यद्भित्रयात्रयावात्रयः युद्धः व्युद्धाः ।

When ignorance is stopped Compositional [actions] will not arise at all. That which stops ignorance Is knowing and meditating on reality.

दे:दर:दे:बै:य्यायश्वासः श्रुरः यश्वा । हे:दर:दे:बै:य्याद्धरः य्यायः विषाः । हे:बै:दे:कृरः व्यायः विषाः । दे:बै:दे:कृरः व्यायः विषाः ।

Through stopping this and that [earlier link of dependent-arising] This and that [later link] will not arise.
The sole mass of suffering
Is thoroughly stopped in this way.

# 20 डेसम्बुद्दस्यः पः दृदः ष्यदः सञ्ज्ञः व्या

है: श्रेन खुद में र तहें के खें न या

बेशस्र र्ये र तहें व य त्वें र यते हु यर म्झूर शय दर विव हु त्वी म्य प्वेव वें।

This and [the other passage just cited] are in agreement and fit together very well with [the line in Nāgārjuna's *Ratnāvalı, (Precious Garland)*], "As long as one conceives the aggregates [to be inherently existent]..." (see just above) which says that the conception of the aggregates [as inherently existent] is the root of cyclic existence.

वसम्बादाः स्वेतः चलेन्यः सेवः यमः है।

सुबात्यासुबाद्यदाहीयवेवाद्या

वेदार्देशम्बर्दर।

व्यवस्यदिः इत्यास्यान्यान्।।

## 

That this is also the assertion of the Noble Āryadeva is clearly indicated by those passages cited earlier,

Just as the physical sense power [pervades] the body...

and also,

5

15

The root of cyclic existence is a consciousness...<sup>76</sup>

10 र्श्केय-दर्यत् ग्रीक्ष-द्व्याः अदिन्यक्ष्त्र-यर्जेक्ष-शु-द्वाना-यु-दर्शन्याः विक्ष-यः स्थित-दर्यत् ग्रीक्ष-य्याः स्थित-प्याः स्थित-प्य

[Buddhapālita explains that] all whatsoever of the reasonings refuting the object to be negated stated by the master [Nāgārjuna] in the *Mūlamadhyamikakārika* (*Treatise on the Middle Way*) were set forth to indicate the non-existence of an own entityness of phenomena, having refuted a nature in phenomena that is mistakenly superimposed by bewilderment as being established by way of their own entities.

Thus [Nāgārjuna] stated the varieties of reasonings only for the sake of eradicating the mode of apprehension of ignorance.

## 20 सुन्द्वःयुः वीः हः यश्रा

The Buddhapālitamūlamadhyamakavṛtti (Buddhapālita Commentary on (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way") says:<sup>77</sup>

What is the purpose in teaching dependent-arising?

These were cited just above. Note that here Dzong-ka-ba has changed the wording of the second reference. Āryadeva said, "The seed of cyclic existence" and Dzong-ka-ba has changed it to, "The root of cylic existence"; he has also shifted terms for cyclic existence, from *srid pa* to '*khor ba*.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>77</sup> This is commentary on Chapter One.

The master [Nāgārjuna], whose very nature is compassion, saw that sentient beings are beset by various sufferings and assumed the task of teaching the reality of things just as it is so that they might be liberated.

## हेन उर त्वेयायर त्वुराय हे बाबु प्रह्न यर प्रह अवाहे।

Therefore, he began teaching dependent-arising.

षदःद्रवाःसञ्चेदःयःस्क्रेदः। । षदःद्रवाःसञ्चेदःयःस्क्रेदः। ।

वेशमञ्जूदशपरिः धुरः र्रे।

For, it is said:

5

10

15

20

25

Seeing what is not real, one is bound; Seeing the real, one is released.

इर्देश्वर्यः इस्रश्चर्त्तुः धरः द्वाप्यः हैः स्वरं यो देश्वरं विद्याने देश्वरं विद्याने देश्वरं विद्याने देश्वरं

What is the reality of things just as it is? It is non-entityness.

Unskilled persons whose eye of intelligence is obscured by the darkness of bewilderment conceive an entityness in things and then generate desire and hatred with regard to them.

म्परमी कें हेत् छेट त्वे व्यायम त्वुराय ने अय्यते श्वरायकामि स्वामी स्वाप्य विष्य विषय विश्वराय के स्वाप्य क

#### लेशमञ्जूदशःभिदः।

When, through the illumination of the knowledge of dependent-arising, the darkness of bewilderment is cleared away and the eye of wisdom sees the non-entityness of things, there is no base [for error], and desire and hatred are not generated with regard to them.

## रवानुदालेराद्वापितास्यस्यस्युराद्वा

Also, in the transition to the twenty-sixth chapter [that same text says]:

Someone says: You have already explained entry into the ultimate through the Mahāyāna texts. Now explain entry into the ultimate through the texts of Śrāvakas.

## वर्देरःचन्द्रःय।

अर्भग्यञ्चीयश्रयश्रायत्राम्बीत्रिम्।

## बेश र्श्रेगशगशुदशः भेटा

5

10

15

20

25

In answer [the Mūlamadhyamikakārika (Treatise on the Middle Way, XVI.1)] says,

Because of being obscured by ignorance, cyclic existence [occurs] again...

## <u> २व:वुेर:वेर:वर्त्र:घते:यळ्यशःर्बेर:र्त्रः।</u>

And, in the transition to the twenty-seventh chapter, [Buddhapālita] says:

Someone says: Now show the non-occurrence of [wrong] views in dependence on scriptures that accord with the vehicle of Śrāvakas.

## वर्तरायम् वर्षायवे तुषात्र वृद्धः लेषात्र ।

In answer, [Nāgārjuna's Mūlamadhyamikakārika (Treatise on the Middle Way, XVII.1)] says, "In the past, [I] arose..."

Through these statements, it is clear that the master Buddhapālita also asserts that the ignorance that is the first of the twelve links [of dependent-arising] is the mistaken superimposition of inherent existence on things and that he asserts that Śrāvakas and Pratyekabuddhas also realize the selflessness of phenomena.

देशन्तः त्रनः त्रमः त्रिश्च स्य स्वीता स्थितः स्वीता स्थान्ति । स्वीता स्थाने त्रम् त्रम्

Therefore, know that the great proof that Śrāvakas and Pratyekabuddhas realize the non-inherent existence of phenomena is this [fact] that the conception of a self of phenomena is the ignorance that is included within the twelve links [of dependent-arising].

#### বৰ্ণবন্ধুয়েশঝ্বা

5

10

15

20

25

हॅग्'यश्यक्षंत्र'त्र'दक्वेद'त्र'हे| | दे'वे'यदे'सुद्ग्यायस्य

Āryadeva's Catuḥśataka (Four Hundred, XVI.23cd) says,

"Conceptuality sees [and] one is bound; it is to be stopped here."

# बेश्चम्ब्रुद्रश्चयते ह्र्म् यायद ह्रम् यायम् स्थित वस्य श्वर्त्त या चेत् या स्थित ची। क्रिश्च स्थाय या स्थित ची व्यवस्थ या स्था स्थाय स्याय स्थाय स्याय स्थाय स्थ

Even the conceptuality mentioned in that statement does not refer to all conceptual consciousnesses whatsoever, but rather to conceptual consciousnesses that mistakenly superimpose on phenomena an establishment by way of their own entities.

#### देवे'वस्येव'य'यश्र

हॅ्ग'यान्ने'यादान्यायायायान्यत्यायात्रे सदायान्यत्ये हें विश्वेष्ट विश्वेष विश्वेष्ट विश्वेष विश्वेष विश्वेष विश्वेष्ट विश्वेष विश्व

## ন্বৈষ্ণাশ্ব্যুহৃষ্ণান্বিদ্যা

For, [commenting on that passage], Chandrakīrti's *Bodhisattvayogācāracatuḥśatakaṭıkā* (Commentary on (Āryadeva's) "Four Hundred") says,

A conceptual consciousness mistakenly superimposes a meaning of inherent existence that is not correct."

# देःषदःर्तृतः र्श्वेदश्चः स्व श्रीः सः रेषाः ययः यवेदः यश्चः यदेः यदे रिः श्रुधः दुःषादः र्हेषाः वश्वश्चः श्रीः श्रुधः यदेषः यश्चे श्वेदः श्रीः श्रुधः यद्वेदः श्रीः श्रुधः यद्वेदः श्रीः श्रुधः यद्वेदः श्रीः श्रुधः यद्वेदः श्रीः श्रीः

Further, it is asserted to be an afflicted ignorance. Hence, those who assert that reasoning refutes the objects of all whatsoever conceptual consciousnesses which conceive, "This is such and such," have not at all investigated in detail.

Otherwise, since, for ordinary beings, the meaning of reality is a hidden phenomenon, they have no way of apprehending the meaning of emptiness with a non-conceptual consciousness.

# हेंग्'य'ग्न्य'सेत्र'वस्रसंउद्'ग्री'स्याय'य'देग्स्य'य्स'ग्वेद्द्र'देश'वेस'ग्री'स्यायद्द्र'त्व्य्यादि'र्येग्'वेस'द्र्यविहार्स्चे'दर्देग्साय' कृद्र'दशुद्र'र्दे ।

Also, if the objects of all whatsoever conceptual consciousnesses were discredited by reasoning, then even the object of an ascertaining consciousness would be like the inherent existence mistakenly superimposed by a mistaken wrong consciousness.

दे.के.ब.चु.च.च्यात्रात्त्र्यात्त्र

Then, it would have to be the case that there was no correct view leading to the state of nirvāṇa, whereby all the activities of hearing, thinking, and so forth with regard to the Mādhyamika texts would be senseless.

## 10 ঘণ্ডীঘন্ত্ৰীঘানাৰা

5

20

25

यन्त्राक्षिः सुन्द्रात्र्यः स्युक्तः विद्याः । र्षेत्रः स्रेत्रः सुन्द्रः सर्वेदः स्रेतः हो । र्षेत्रः स्रेतः सुन्द्रः स्रोत्द्रः स्रेतः स्रोत्रः स्रोते स्रोत्रः स्रोत्र

#### 15 वैश्वाम्बुदश्वादश्वी

For, Āryadeva's Catuḥśataka (Four Hundred, VIII.7) says:<sup>78</sup>

[Some say] "I will attain nirvāṇa,"

Seeing what is not empty as if empty, [but they will] not.

The Tathagatas said that

One does not reach nirvana through [such] wrong views.

વાર્વાસાયા સ્વાપાલું તાલું ત

All those things posited through the force of tenets, the many different mistaken superimpositions by the proponents of [true] existence of our own [Buddhist] and other [i.e., non-Buddhist] schools, having taken as their basis just this referent object of the mode of apprehension of the ignorance that has been explained above, will be overcome completely when one eradicates the object of the mode of apprehension of ignorance, like a tree that is cut from the root.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>78</sup> P5246, vol. 95, 136.2.4-136.2.5. See Lang, p.80.

# विषास्त्राञ्चत् ग्रीकाची प्रमुद्धा क्षेत्र ह्यो का स्वापाद स्

Therefore, those having the faculty of wisdom should know that the referent object of innate ignorance is the basic object to be negated and should not be intent on refuting merely those imputations that are imputed by only some propounders of tenets.

## वदीःसूरःद्रमानाः चुःवर्गेनाःयः वैः चुः यद्यः स्वर्धः वद्यः वद्यः वेदः यद्यः स्वर्धः व

5

15

20

25

For, refuting the object to be negated in this way is not done upon being bereft of activity [that is, not having anything else to do].

## <u> नृज्ञान्तुः नृत्रेः स्तृत्रः क्रुः व्यान्त्रं ज्ञान्त्रे ज्ञान्त्रे अक्ष्रान्त्रः त्रमः त्र्ये नः त्रमः त्री नः त्रमः त</u>

Rather, having seen that living beings are bound in cyclic existence by the wrong conceptual consciousness that has the object to be negated as its object, one eradicates its object.

# श्रेमशङ्क व्यवस्त स्वर्ग्य प्रति स्वर्षे स्वरं स्वर्षे स्वरं स्वरं

And, that which binds all sentient beings in cyclic existence is innate ignorance; acquired ignorance, since it exists in only those who propound tenets, is not feasible to be the root of cyclic existence.

## वदीःवादेश्वादाद्रश्चेम्शाद्धेदायमाङ्गेदायानेतानुगावाङेवि।

It is very important to gain definite ascertainment with regard to this.

# 

Hence, the final wrong conceptual consciousness conceiving the object to be negated is the innate ignorance that is the first of the twelve links [of dependent-arising].

# युव'यहग्राश्चाची'न्यायाचु'ह्रस्रस्यायाद्रश्चायावित्रः युक्षाव्याक्ष्याद्वीत् । । यदे त्यहेव स्थ्रत्याया स्थ्रायाच्याया स्थ्रत्या स्थ्रायाची व्यव्यायाची प्रत्याची प्र

Further, artificial objects to be negated are merely mistaken superimpositions based on the former. Thus, all modes of apprehension of non-conceptual consciousnesses, sense consciousnesses and so forth, are in no way eradicated by reasoning.

Therefore, the awarenesses whose mode of apprehension is to be eradicated by reasoning are only conceptual mental consciousnesses and, moreover, are the two conceptions of self or those conceptual consciousnesses mistakenly superimposing [further] attributes on objects that are imputed by those [two conceptions of self].

## र्हेग्'य'ग्रद्योवेद्यस्य अरुद्रायासी दुर्दे।

5

15

20

They are not all conceptual consciousnesses whatsoever.

## व्यात्रां देवा स्वाप्तां देवा स्वाप्तां के स्वाप्तां स्वापतां स्वापतां

Question: What is the mode of mistaken superimposition of inherent existence a) by ignorance?

# 10 श्वीरक्षियाद्यंत्रादिदेशम्बुदात्त्रश्रामुत्रक्षियाद्धातुःश्वायाद्यदेश्वित्त्रम्भश्चायद्याद्वायाद्यदेश्वः स्वत्याद्वायास्याद्वायास्याद्वायाद्वायाद्वायाद्वायाद्वायाद्वायाद्वायाद्वायाद्वायाद्वायाद्वायाद्वायाद्वायाद्वाय

[Answer:] In general, there appear in the texts of this master [Chandrakīrti] many usages of verbal conventions such as "nature"/"inherent existence (rang bzhin, svabhāva) or "own entity" "(rang gi ngo bo, svarūpa) with regard to objects that are established as mere conventionalities.

त्री राष्ट्री मारा बना मार्था के श्रामारा प्यार स्ट्राय ते प्यार स्थाय श्रीते प्रायत ने श्रायत ने श्रीत स्थाय के श्रीत स्थाय स्थ

However, here [in the case of mistaken superimposition of inherent existence], there is, with regard to objects, be they persons or [other] phenomena, a conception that those phenomena have a mode of abiding, or a mode of subsistence, from their own sides without being posited through the force of an awareness; the referent object that is apprehended thus by that [conception], that own mode of subsistence of those phenomena, is identified as a hypothetical "self" or "inherent existence".<sup>79</sup>

# यर्भः गुत्रः स्टान्यम् स्रोनः सः स्रो । देश्वातः यन्यात्रे स्यान्यः स्रो ।

For, [Āryadeva's Catuhsataka (Four Hundred, XIV.23cd)] says:

All these are without self-power; Therefore there is no self.

Tt is "hypothetical," since it does not in the least exist.

## बेशपरीयनियमुपरीरम्मेयापायस्य

5

10

15

## 

Commenting on this, Chandrakīrti's Commentary on (Āryadeva's) "Four Hundred" says:

That which is [established] by its own entity, inherently, under its own power, and without depending on another...

### बेबादे द्वा इसामाद्वा शुरावा सुद्वा दा सूर दें।

Thus [Chandrakīrti] says that those are synonyms.

# देःत्यःमाब्दाःयःसम्। सःयाक्षःविश्वायःदेः मुःमोद्दाःयःसम्। सःयश्वायः सःयोद्दाः भीवायः स्वतः स्वतः स्वतः स्वतः स द्वादः मीवायव्यवायः सेवः याक्षः स्वतः याक्षः स्वतः सःयाः सःयाः सःयाः सःयोद्दाः ।

"Without depending on another" [in the above passage] does not mean not depending on causes and conditions. Rather "other" refers to an object-possessor, a conventional consciousness, and [something is said] not to depend on another due to not being posited through the force of that [conventional consciousness].

## देशक्ष'क'र्स्स्प्रियाचावेश'चु'श्लेष्णुय'दे'द्वा'मी'स्स्स्रियाची'मात्रश्चा'स्था'श्चेर्'स्याश्चेर्'स्या श्चित'र्से स्थित'स्या

Therefore, "self-powered" means an entity of an object that is its own uncommon mode of abiding or mode of subsistence.

## दे'नेद'ल'रद'में दें'दं'द्र'रद'र्य में रद'यबेद'बेद्रा'वुर्दे।

Just that is called an "own entity" or "own nature" [i.e., inherent existence].

# 

For example, with regard to a snake imputed to a rope, leaving aside how it is imputed from the side of an awareness apprehending a snake, since when one analyzes what the snake is like from the point of view of its entity, a snake is just not established in terms of that object, its features are unanalyzable.

# केंबायरी इसबा ग्राट शक्ष्र प्रायते ह्वेंदि दें व है क्ष्र स्वर प्रायति स्वर हिं या प्रायति । या प

Similarly, with regard to these phenomena also, leaving aside analysis with regard to the mode of appearance, this being how they appear to a conventional awareness, when one analyzes in terms of objects what those phenomena's own mode of abiding is like, it is not established at all.

Whereas this is so, such is not apprehended; rather there is the conception that those phenomena each have a mode of abiding that is comprehended from their own sides without being posited through the force of a conventional consciousness.

## प्रवे प्रमु प्रदे र में या पार प्रमा

5

10

15

20

हॅग्यायार्षेद्रायार्वे त्रश्चार्षद्रायाकेद्राद्रहेग्याया सेद्रायमार्षेद्राया केद्रास्यादे द्रग्वादे विष्या सम्य त्याय कृत्रश्चायते श्चर्या सुमामस्य विषय सम्याद्राया सम्याद्रश्चाया सम्याद्रश्चाया सम्याद्रश्चाया सम्याद्रश्चाय

Chandrakīrti's Commentary on (Āryadeva's) "Four Hundred" says:80

Those that exist only through the existence of thought and those that do not exist without thought are unquestionably to be ascertained as not established by way of their own entities, like a snake that is imputed to a coiled rope.

# वेशम्यामी द्वारा मान्यामी विश्वास मान्या मान

[Chandrakīrti] sets forth thus the way in which [phenomena] are not established by way of their own entities.

Therefore, establishment with an object by way of its own entity without being posited through the force of an internal mind is called "self" or "inherent existence", and it is said that the non-existence of that with the person as the substratum is the selflessness of the person and the non-existence of that in terms of phenomena such as eyes, ears, and so forth is the selflessness of phenomena.

Therefore, one can realize implicitly that conceptions of that inherent existence as existing in terms of persons and phenomena are conceptions of the two selves.

This is commentary on VIII.3.

## प्रवे प्रमु प्रदे र में या प्राया

5

10

15

20

25

It is as Chandrakīrti's *Bodhisattvayogācāracatuḥśatakaṭıkā* (Commentary on (Āryadeva's) "Four Hundred") says:<sup>81</sup>

देश्यायद्वा डेश्वायु यात्रे वादालीवा द्रिशार्थी द्वश्वायी वावत्राया स्वायायश्चायते द्वित्र वित्र वित्

"Self" is an entity of things that does not depend on others—inherent existence. The non-existence of that is selflessness.

देवे के अप्तरम्य विषयम् विषयम्

It is realized as twofold through the division into phenomena and persons—a "selflessness of phenomena" and a "selflessness of persons".

मात्य हे मादा बमा सदा मी अर्क्ष के दे श्री अर्म्या प्राप्त स्वर्ध के स्वर्ध के स्वर्ध के स्वर्ध के स्वर्ध के स

[Qualm:] It is not reasonable that the conception of persons as established by way of their own characteristic natures be a conception of a self of persons.

characteristic natures would be a conception of a self of persons.

And, if that is asserted, whereas it should be a view of the perishing aggregates [as I and mine], in that there is no conception thinking, "I", it is not reasonable that it be a view of the perishing aggregates [as I and mine].

बन्नाक्षेत्रप्रस्त्रविद्वर्षेत्रप्रस्त्रविद्वर्षेत्रप्रदेश्वर्षेत्रप्रदेश्वर्षेत्रप्रस्त्रप्रदेश्वर्षेत्रप्रदेश

[Answer.] Since, as explained earlier, Chandrakīrti said that an inherent existence of persons is a self of persons, a conception of the person as inherently existent must be asserted as a conception of a self of persons.

र्देत्र गुप्तः मप्तः वर्गाः मित्रमः प्तः त्रहेत्र स्वाः स

However, a conception of a self of persons is not necessarily a view of the perishing aggregates [as I and mine].

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>81</sup> This is from Chapter Twelve.

## र्देन यहेगा सूर्यः यहमा यहेन या हे यह लेगा ह्याँ आह्रु आत्र

What is needed in order to have a conception of self that is view of the perishing aggregates [as I and mine]?

यहेगाः भृगात् न्यह्मात्राण्ची न्यन्या यहेत् त्या अरार्येश्वाचगुरान्यते श्रेष्या त्यात्रात्वीया यीश्वास्त्रात्या द्वीया यीश्वास्त्रात्या प्रत्या स्वास्त्रात्या स्वास्त्रात

Regarding a conception of self that is an acquired view of the perishing aggregates [as I and mine], it does not appear to be definite, as in the case of some Sa mitiya schools, which [propound] a conception of self upon observing the aggregates.

तह्रम्'ॡ'ॡ्व'भ्रेब'ने तह्रम्'यर्'त्रीम्बार्यायेन यायम्बार्यायेन प्रत्यायम्बार्यः यहेन् वश्चायह्रम् वश्चायदे यद्याप्य वश्चायः विद्याप्य प्रत्य प्रत्य

However, regarding an innate view of the perishing aggregates [as I and mine], Chandrakīrti's Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way" refutes that the aggregates are the object of observation and his [Auto]commentary on the Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way" says that the dependently imputed self is the object of observation.

## स्टार्चि त्यान् सेना साय र से हो न र हो । न र हा न र सेना साय हो ।

Hence, [an innate view of the perishing aggregates as I and mine] does not take the aggregates as its object of observation, but rather observes the mere person.

दे.लट.टर्ष्ट्रश्रम्भात्तर्प्त्रहेष्यः सङ्ग्रीत्वर्षः मिष्ट्रम्पत्तरः मिटा चयाः स्त्रीत्रः स्वर्षः मिष्ट्रम्पत्तरः मिष्ट्रम्पत्तरः स्वर्षः स्वर्षः स्वर्षः स्वर्षः स्वर्षः स्वर्षः स्वर्षः स्वर्षः स्वरं स्

Moreover, it must a person who is a basis for generating the thought "I." Thus, a person of another continuum is not the object of observation.

५ त्रीम् अप्यादे त्यादे त्रु स्पत्रे त्यादे त्रु स्पत्रे त्यादे त्रु स्पत्रे त्यादे त

### वेशमञ्जूदशयश्र

20

25

With regard to how that object of observation is apprehended, Chandrakīrti's *Madhaymakāvatārabhāṣya* ([Auto]commentary on the Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way") says:<sup>82</sup>

Concerning that, a view of the perishing aggregates [as I and mine] operates within thoughts of "I" and "mine".

This is commentary on VI.120.

# र्रे में अर्डन केर में अर्था मुद्राय दे रर्द विवर्ष राय र्ड अर्दु दिन या अवर में।

Thus, it is not a conception of mere inherent existence, that is, establishment by way of [an object's] own characteristic nature, but must be a conception thinking "I".

## लट.प्रह्या.प्रज्ञोता.प्रश्रा

5

10

15

20

25

दहेग्रार्क्षेत्रसायाक्षाचार्वित् श्रुटाचराचु चाष्पेत्राय। देष्यदाचन्यायी चन्या श्रेन्।यंत्रन्तुः सुन्यसार्श्रेटाचरायग्रुटा चन्ना

Chandrakīrti's [Auto]commentary on the Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way" also says: 83

Just the view of the perishing aggregates [as I and mine] is to be abandoned, and it is abandoned upon understanding the selflessness of the self.

बेश्चन्द्रीम्श्चायमः शुरायदे यन् माने देशयन् माने नामा अन्यास्त्रीय । मानुस्यायस्य नेश्वास्य नेद्यास्त्रीम् अन्य स्त्रीत् ।

Thus [Chandrakīrti] says that [the view of the perishing aggregates] is abandoned by way of realization of the selflessness, that is, the non-inherent existence, of that self which is its object of observation contradicting the mode of apprehension [of the view of the perishing aggregates]. Hence, [the view of the perishing aggregates] must apprehend the opposite of that wisdom [realizing selflessness].

# देॱषदःषदःबगः सदःषीः दें रवे देव श्रीकाश्चातः यसः यहेव या षिवः यक्षः सदःषीः अर्क्षवः वेदःश्चीकाश्चातः यदे रदेवः क्षुक्षः दुः यहेव यदे। ।

Moreover, since [a view of the perishing aggregates as I and mine] is a conception of the person as established by way of its own entity, it is a conception of an "I" that is established by way of its own characteristic nature.

## राधिरायहित्रायदे यहेगाः भूष्याराने बार्स्य से बार्च रामिता ।

As exemplified by this, you should understand the view of the perishing aggregates that is a conception of mine.

Conceptions of the person as substantially existent that do not conceive "I" or "mine" are cases of ignorance that is obscured with regard to a self of persons. However, they are not not afflictions [that is, they are afflicted ignorance].

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>83</sup> This is still commentary on VI.120.

# देःक्ष्रस्य स्टर्मि दिविषासुदायदेः स्टर्मित्र स्थायाय मातृत्यत्वमाया प्राप्त दिविष्ठ स्थाया स्थाया स्थाया स्थाय या स्थाया

Hence, mere inherent existence, or establishment by way of [an object's] own entity, is posited as self and also the object of an awareness that merely thinks "I" is taken as self.

## 5 ५८:वॅं वे ने मुक्षाय दे न मृत्या चु : धेव त्या चु : या वे : व्यक्त न : व्यक्त न : वे : वे विकास के : विकास विकास

From among these two, the former is the object to be negated by reasoning, whereas the latter, since it is asserted conventionally, is not refuted.

# देशकी तिहिना सुरक्ष क्षेत्र श्री श्राणी दिशेन श्राप्य शेरिने निष्य स्थान है ते श्री स्थाय ति तिहिन सुद्धा की स्टर्मी हैं हिंदी श्री स्थाय ति हैं हैं स्थाय ति तिहिन सुद्धा की स्टर्मी हैं हिंदी श्री स्थाय ति हैं हैं स्थाय की स्थाय है। स्थाय स्थाय सिंदी हैं स्थाय है हैं स्थाय है। स्थाय सिंदी हैं सिंदी स्थाय सिंदी हैं सिंदी सिंदी सिंदी सिंदी सिंदी हैं सिंदी सिंदी

Therefore, this indicates that the object of observation of the innate view of the perishing aggregates [as I and mine] is not refuted. However, since the mode of apprehension which has its aspect is an I that is established by way of its own entity, it is not that that [mode of apprehension] is not refuted.

## दयेराव क्षुां हमा वहें वा की दश्चे मान्याया क्षुा शे वर्षों मा गुरादे विकास का सुन मान्याय वर्षे मा या शे वर्षा मा

This is like the way in which, for example, it is not contradictory that the sound which is the object of observation of the conception that sound is permanent is not refuted, but the permanent sound that is the referent object of that [conception] is refuted.

# देश्वरावायम्बर्धायाः स्वराष्ट्राच्याः स्वराष्ट्राच्याः विद्याः स्वर्धः स्वरायाः स्वरायाः स्वरायाः स्वरायाः स्व स्वरायाः स्व स्वरायायः स्वरायाः स

Thus, you should know that the [meaning of] the "inherent existence" and so forth mentioned in the texts of the Noble father [Nāgārjuna], his [spiritual] son [Āryadeva], and the two masters [Buddhapālita and Chandrakīrti] when refuting [others] saying, "If things existed inherently", "If things existed by way of their own entities", "If things existed by way of their own characteristic natures", "If things existed substantially", is as indicated above. 84

## 25 दे दे दे त्या अदे प्यतः भ्रें व प्यते अवा मुस्सा की देव प्यतः भ्रेया प्यतः विव प्या स्था की देव स्था की देव प्यतः भ्रें व प्रतः व

And, you should also understand that the meaning of the words indicating that these do not exist is an indication that those objects do not exist as they are conceived by ignorance.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>84</sup> In other words, inherence existence, etc., indicate an entity that does not depend upon anything else.

## [Chapter 14. When Qualification Is Needed]

## गक्षिया ने 'द्रामा नु माव्य स्था क्षेत्र मान्य दे स्था की

[2/3] Second, How These [Qualifications Such As Inherently] Are Or Are Not Affixed To Other Objects To Be Negated

# ५ रेवॅटकी उप्तर्शें मन्या की सुर्थ र्सेम्बर्य महत्र सेट्र या इसका सेट्रें लेका श्रुप्त व सिट्र या रेहें श्रुप्त से मन्या महत्र सेट्र या इसका सेट्रें लेका श्रुप्त व सिट्र या रेहें श्रुप्त सेट्रें सेट

When you propound that utter non-existents such as the horns of a rabbit and the son of a barren woman do not exist, you need not affix a qualification [such as "ultimately", "inherently", and so forth].

Similarly, there are things that, although existent among objects of knowledge, exist at some times and places and do not exist at other times and places. <sup>85</sup> When you say that these do not exist at a particular time or place, there is also no need to affix that qualification.

म्बद्धायात्रे स्वत्यात्रे स्वत्यात्यात्रे स्वत्यात्रे स्वत्यात्रे स्वत्यात्रे स्वत्यात्रे स्वत्यात्रे स्वत्यात्रे स्वत्यात्रे स्वत्यात्रे स्वत्यात्रे स्वत्यात्यात्रे स्वत्यात्रे स्वत्यात्रे स्वत्यात्रे स्वत्यात्रे स्वत्यात्यात्यात्रे स्वत्यात्रे स्वत्यात्रे स्वत्यात्यात्यात्यात्यात्यात्यात्या

Furthermore, when refuting those things which the Mādhyamikas do not assert to be established conventionally, mistaken superimpositions by the uncommon assertions of both Buddhist and non-Buddhist proponents of [true] existence, except for some occasions when you should affix [that qualification] to those, taking into account the thought [of the opponents], there is [in general] no need to newly affix the qualification "inherently", that is, "established by way of its own entity" to objects.

# दे'द्रम्'यः'र्द्द्द्र'दे'शुव्राधवयःश्च्रु'यःदे'द्रम्'मीश्चामश्चःत्वद्रश्चित्र'र्द्द्या ।

15

20

For, those proponents of tenets have already asserted those [objects] to have that meaning [i.e., to inherently exist].

For instance, *mchan* gives the example of lotuses, which do not exist in dry and arrid areas but do exist in places that are warm and moist, and similary do not exist, or occur, in winter, but do in summer.

15

20

25

दश्चित्यमः ने साञ्च मानवित्यायम् अति । वर्षे वास्त्राच अति प्रति स्वाय प्रति स्वाय स्वाय स्वाय स्वाय स्वाय स्व त्री स्वाय स्व स्वाय स्व

With regard to objects other than those which the Mādhyamikas posit conventionally, whatever they are, if you do not, on occasions of refuting them, affix a qualification, then the fallacies [expressed to the opponent] apply similarly even to just that refutory reasoning whereby it becomes just a facsimile of refutation. Thus, [the qualification] must be affixed.

माब्बन्यायम् स्थान्त्र स्थान्त्र स्थान्य स्थान्त्र स्था

Moreover, as explained earlier,<sup>86</sup> the objects posited conventionally by the Mādhyamikas must not be discredited by a reasoning consciousness analyzing whether something exists inherently or not, nor by conventional valid cognition.

देःद्वः अःधेवःवः द्यदः ध्वुषाः यः ऋषावायः वः ऋष्दः दुः विवयः श्रेः योवः यः षात्रुषावायः ऋषावायः विवयः योवः योव

For, otherwise, a difference between not asserting conventionally Iśvara and so forth and asserting forms, sounds, and so forth would be utterly unsuitable;

 $\frac{1}{2} \left[ \frac{1}{2} \left[ \frac{1}{2}$ 

hence, there would be no way to make either mundane or supramundane presentations such as, "Such and such is the path," "Such and such is not the path," "Such a tenet is correct," "Such is not correct." Thereby, this distinguishing feature that all the presentations of cyclic existence and nirvāṇa are feasible within the emptiness of inherent existence would be unsuitable.

देप्स्रमः स्वर्षः स्वर्षः स्वर्षः मित्रं द्यान् देश्यान्य स्वर्षः स्वर्षः स्वर्षः स्वर्षः स्वर्षः स्वर्षः स्वर

If you assert that those [objects] are refuted even though they are not in this way discredited by valid cognition, this is a source of scornful laughter by the skilled.

देशक्रेन्रिन्त्रार्क्ष्मायम्मासुम्स्रायदेःस्र्यम्स्रात्ते मिर्देक्ष्मेः सम्मान्त्रम् स्राप्तम् स्राप्तम् स्राप्तम्

Therefore, on occasions of stating that those [phenomena such as forms] are refuted, you should unquestionably affix that qualification.

See above, Chapter Ten, where Dzong-ka-ba discussed the criteria that must be met for something to be certified as conventionally existent.

# यो विद्याल्या विद्याल्या प्रत्या के साथ प्रत्य के साथ के स

In Chandrakīrti's *Commentary on (Āryadeva's) "Four Hundred"* and in his *Commentary on (Nāgārjuna's) "Sixty Stanzas on Reasoning"*, the affixing of that qualification when refuting the object to be negated appears a great many times.

Also, many occasions where it is affixed are seen in Nāgārjuna's Mūlamadhyamikakārika (Treatise on the Middle Way), the Buddhapālitamūlamadhyamakavrtti (Buddhapālita Commentary on (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way"), Chandrakīrti's Prasannapadā (Clear Words), and his Madhyamakāvatāra (Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way") along with his Madhaymakāvatārabhāśya ([Auto]commentary on the Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way"). Thus, seeing that [to affix the qualification every time it is appropriate] involves a great many words, and thinking that it is easy to realize [where it is needed] even when not affixed through the essential of [seeing] those places where it is affixed, [that qualification] should be affixed even on those occasions when it was not affixed.

#### दे'द्रवाखार्श्वेदाकी'र्श्वेदाकी'। इंदर्गाखार्श्वेदाकी'र्श्वेदाकी'

5

10

15

20

For, there is not the slightest difference between those places where it was and was not affixed.

## म्बर्भात्रम् स्वाप्तरात्त्रम् त्रात्त्रम् त्रात्मा स्वाप्ति स्वाप्ति स्वाप्तरात्त्रम् स्वाप्तरात्त्रम् स्वाप्त

Furthermore, frequently there occurs the affixing of a qualification of analysis, saying, "When analyzed, it does not exist."

# देः व्यास्त्र स्वास्त्र स्व

As explained above, this is a statement that if something were established by way of its own entity, it would have to be found by a reasoning consciousness analyzing its mode of being; however, it is not found, and therefore, an object that is established by way of its own entity does not exist. Hence, you should realize that this is the same point as saying, "It does not exist inherently, that is, is not established by way of its own entity."

## বর্ন বর্নু 'ঘর 'র শ্রীঝ' ঘ' ঝঙ্খ।

यायाके, देह् अ.ह्य. तर्ने, द्वा. अवात्य अदिः त्व्रं प्रत्य क्षे. त्यं द्वा. त्या अवाय्य अवायः व्याप्त क्षे. त्य देवे. क्षे. देश्व. ह्य. त्या देश्व. ह्य. त्या क्षे. क्षे. ह्य. त्या क्षे. त्या क्षे. त्या अवायः व्याप्त क्षे. त्या क्ष

### वेशमञ्जदशयःस्ट्ररःम् ।[666]

5

10

For, it is as Chandrakīrti's *Bodhisattvayogācāracatuḥśatakaṭıkā* (Commentary on (Āryadeva's) "Four Hundred") says: <sup>87</sup>

If these things did not become non-things due to being deceptive, like the wheel of a firebrand, an emanation, and so forth, then when definitely analyzed with reasoning, their own entities would be observed very clearly, as is the case with gold. However, these, due to possessing causes that are only erroneous, when burned with the fire of analysis, do not not become without their own entity [i.e., they are without an own entity].

Page 214 of 230

P5266, vol. 98, 265.1.3-265.1.5.

[3/3] Third, An Explanation Of Whether Or Not The Qualification "Ultimately" Needs To Be Affixed To The Object To Be Negated

# <u> २ ना ना नु : २० 'र्न् , देश मी : विराध राष्ट्रीं र ना राम् नु सार्थ के देश में स्वीका की सिना की सिना से सिना स</u>

To propound that affixing the qualification "ultimately" to the object to be negated is the system of only the Svātantrika-Mādhyamikas is very unreasonable.

## वह्मायम्यायम्

10

15

20

A Mother of the Conquerors [a Perfection of Wisdom Sūtra] cited in Chandrakīrti's [Auto]commentary on the Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way" says: 88

## 

"Venerable Subhuti, is it that there is no attainment and no clear realization?"

स्य वर्चे र मुक्ष मा के प्र प्व प्य पृत्रे ते सुर्वे प्य प्र में प्र प्य प्र मित्र में प्र प्य प्र मित्र मि

Subhuti answered, "Venerable Śāriputra, there is attainment and there is also clear realization, but not in the manner of dualism.

## ૹૻૺઽૢઽૡૢ૱ઌૡૢૺ૾૽૱૽ૺ૱ૹ૽ૼ૱ઌ૱ઌ૽૽ૼ૱ઌ૱૽૽ૼૹૣૹઌ૱૽૽ઌ૽૽૱ૡ૽૽૱૽૽ૢ૽૱ૹૢ૽ૢ૽ઽૺૺઌ૽૽૱ઌ

Venerable Śāriputra, attainment and clear realization exist as worldly conventions.

ब्रुव-तु-लुग्रब-प्र-त्यव-रेग-ध्री-र्दि-प्र-त्-प्र-क्षी-रक्षी-रक्षी-रक्षी-प्र-तिन्-त्-प्र-तिन्-त्-प्र-तिन्-त्-प्र-तिन-क्षी-रक्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-रक्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-रक्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-रक्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-रक्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-रक्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-रक्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-रक्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-रक्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-रक्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-रक्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-रक्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-रक्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-रक्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-रक्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-रक्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-रक्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-रक्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-रक्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-रक्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-रक्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षि-प्र-तिन-क्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-प्र-तिन-क्षी-प्र-तिन-क

Also Stream Enterers, Once Returners, Never Returners, Arhats, Pratyekabuddhas, and Bodhisattvas exist as worldly conventions.

## र्देवरम्बर्यस्वे र्वेनर्यस्वे रहेरस्वर्देवर्यस्क्रिंग्रायस्वे रहे।

However, ultimately, there is no attainment and there is no clear realization.

This is in a section of commentary on VI.173.

## लेबाम्बुद्रबादाःसूर्रः तुः वर्षाः सुद्राद्रवीं बाद्यराद्र्याः द्रोताः वर्षाः वर्षाः स्वाद्राद्राद्रादे स्वाद्र

In that it said in Chandrakīrti's [Auto] commentary on the Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way" that one should assert [these matters] in accordance with that statement, do you propound that [this sūtra] is a Svātantrika sūtra?

# देःचवित्रःतुःदेश्वःर्देत्रःष्ठीःअर्देःद्व्यश्वत्रश्चर्देत्रःद्वयःयदेःश्वरःयमञ्जूरःयःवितःशुःसरःयमञ्जूरःदेश् ।

There are seen to be a great many such cases of the affixing of the qualification "ultimately" in sūtras of definitive meaning.

# र्बेह्र के त्र यत्तु व द्धार्य त्यक्ष ग्राम्य । यावका यत्य अक्षेत्र त्ये व स्थार्य व स्थाय्य व स्थाय व स्थाय्य व स्थाय्य व स्थाय्य व स्थाय्य व स्थाय्य व स्थाय्य व स्

म्बुद्द्राः ग्रीः यदः द्वाः द्वदः मेदाः सेद्राः।

### वेशन्या

10

15

20

25

Also, Nāgārjuna's Śūnyatāsaptati (Seventy Stanzas on Emptiness, stanza 1) says:

Do abiding, production, or cessation exist or not? Buddha said that low, middling, and special [persons exist] By the power of worldly conventions, But not through [their own] reality.

## रेव केव सेट पा त्या

यन्त्रान्द्रयन्त्रात्त्रीरः व्यक्तिः स्त्रात्त्रात्त्रात्त्रात्त्रात्त्रात्त्रात्त्रात्त्रात्त्रात्त्रात्त्रात्त

#### डेबायाद्या

Also, Nāgārjuna's Ratnāvalı (Precious Garland, I.28ab) says:89

This existence of I and mine Is not as ultimate objects.

The verse as found there is somewhat different from how Dzong-ka-ba has cited it.

म्परम् अर्चेत्यम् त्यादेव । भ्रुव्यायदेव यामायाविम् ।

#### **डे**श'८८'।

5

10

15

20

Also (I.29cd):

How could the production of that Of which the seed is false be true?

देःचित्रत्त्वेत्तः स्त्रिः त्याः त्रेतः त्याः । भ्रोः द्वाः त्याः त्रेतः श्रूष्टः प्यतः। । द्वाः चित्रः देतः त्रः भ्रोः चः द्वाः । द्वाः चः त्रेतः त्रः भ्रोः चः द्वाः ।

Also (II.11):

Similarly, in this world which is like a magician's illusion Production and disintegration are seen, But, ultimately, there is no production And no disintegration.

# 

Thus, there are many statements in which "ultimately", "truly", or "in reality", are affixed to the object to be negated; ...

...and, even when those are not affixed, there are a great many instances of the affixing of the qualification, "does not exist by way of its own entity," "does not exist inherently", and "does not exist in the manner of being established by way of its own characteristic nature".

## त्र द्वाप्य थे क्या या प्र

5

10

15

20

25

Also, the Buddhapālitamūlamadhyamakavṛtti (Buddhapālita Commentary on (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way") says:

#### लेबारवुद्ग्यबा

[Nāgārjuna's Mūlamadhyamikakārika (Treatise on the Middle Way), XXIV.8] says:

Doctrines taught by the Buddhas Rely wholly on the two truths—Worldly conventional truths And ultimate truths.

दे'त्य'दिन्नाहेत'श्चे'तुत्र'र्ह्स्च'श्चे'चदेत'य'गद्निक्ष'त्रक्ष'त्र'र्क्ष्य'अ'र्ष्क्ष'द्रित्'श्चेक्ष'व्हेत्'श्चेक्ष'त्रेक्ष'व्हेत्'श्चेक्ष'त्रेक्ष

Thus, through the force of worldly conventional truths it is said, "A pot exist," "A bamboo mat exists." And, through just that, the impermanence of those is also expressed—"The pot broke," "The bamboo mat burned."

चारःचीःक्रें दे।च्रि.व.चश्रश्चात्रक्ष्यात्यादेष्ठःक्षेत्रे व्यवस्थात्यात्रम्यात्रात्त्वात्रम्यात्रम्य व्यवस्थात्रम्य विष्णात्रम्य विष्णात्य विष्णात्रम्य विष्णात्य विष्णात्रम्य विष्णात्रम्य विष्णात्रम्य विष्णात्रम्य विष्णात्य

When one initiates thought about reality, in that pots and bamboo mats are dependently imputed objects, they are unfeasible, in which case how could their being broken or burned be feasible?

म्बन्यस्य स्थान्त्र स्यान्त्र स्थान्त्र स्थान्त्र स्थान्त्र स्थान्त्र स्थान्त्र स्थान्य स्थान्त्र स्थान्त्

Furthermore, even the Tathāgata is expressed as impermanent through the force of worldly conventions, "The Tathāgata has grown old," "The Tathāgata has passed from sorrow."

यदःम्'ळे'र्देब'द्यायात्रश्चायादेवे'ळे'वे'दे'चबेवाम्नेग्रायाकेद्र'श्चे'त्वद्रवायमेश्चायाद्वीत्रायात्रश्चायाद्वी विद्याप्तरायात्रायात्रश्चायात्रश्चायात्र्वीत्राचे

### ন্বিষাশাস্ক্রমার্ম্য

5

10

15

20

[However,] if, in that when one contemplates the ultimate, even the Tathāgata is not feasible, how could [his] growing old and passing from sorrow be feasible?

# र्बेत्र'न्य्व'त्रु'त्र'त्रु'त्र'त्र्वाष्यश्चाद्र'य्यदेरु यदेरु क्षेत्र'त्र्यंष्य प्यत्रेत्र'त्र्यंष्य प्रत्येत्र'त्र्यंष्य प्रत्येत्र'त्र्यंष्य प्रत्येत्र'त्र्यंष्य प्रत्येत्र'त्र्यंष्य

Also, the master Chandrakīrti said that he refuted true production but did not refute mere production.

# रेग्रम्यपुग्रुपदेखेलम्यायायम्

द्यायान्य प्राप्ता । व्याप्ता विकास प्रमुख्य प्

His Yuktisastikāvrtti (Commentary on (Nāgārjuna's) "Sixty Stanzas on Reasoning") says:90

We do not propound that the apprehension of a reflection, dependently produced, being observed as only false, is not produced in whatever aspect.

However, we do propound that it is not produced as that nature which it is posited as being without.

# <u>देःचद्याःकेदःयादःदुःश्चेःचःसेदःयनःद्वसःयमःचल्याःकेः</u>त्रा

As what nature is it posited as not being produced?

As a [final] nature [or inherent existence] that is asserted as being true.

However, it is not [that it is not produced] as an entity that is false because it is asserted as arising dependently as that [false] entity.

Dzong-ka-ba would seem to have been looking at a different translation.

# बेश्यम् विषयः भ्रात्मा स्वाप्ता स्वापता स्वाप्ता स्वापता स्वाप्ता स्वापता स

Thus, [Chandrakīrti] says that due to not refuting production that is false like a magician's illusions and refuting true production, the two, production dependently and non-production inherently, are not contradictory.

### ने केन वा

5

10

देते: खेर देन क्षेत्र व क्षेत्र प्राप्त क्षेत्र क्षेत्र प्राप्त क्षेत्र क्षेत्र प्राप्त क्षेत्र क्

That same text [Chandrakīrti's Yuktiṣaṣṭikāvṛtti, Commentary on (Nāgārjuna's) "Sixty Stanzas on Reasoning"] says:<sup>91</sup>

Therefore, because in that case the two, production and non-production, are just different objects, how could they be mutually contradictory?

15 Also:

20

25

When we [Mādhyamikas] propound that whatever is produced dependently is not produced inherently, as with a reflection, how could there by any opportunity for dispute?

# डेकायहेव वका क्षेत्राय ५८ ४८ या विव ग्रीका या क्षेत्राय त्वाया यस यस ५ यदि त्वव ५ ग्रीक्षरका की ।

This was stated as an answer to an objection that production dependently and non-production ultimately are contradictory.

दर्बा दा तक्षा ग्रीटा

देख्वीर देखेंदि देश यश्चाद देश महित स्था । देखेंदि सम्बद्धी स्टिम स्टिम

Also, Chandrakīrti's Madhyamakāvatāra (Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way", VI.93cd) says:

Therefore, you should know through such stages, that things, from the beginning, Are not produced in reality, but are produced in the world.

This immediately follows that preceding quote. Again, there are significant enough variations to suggest that Dzong-ka-ba was looking at a different translation.

# बेबासाञ्चेबायायाने विंव केन् ग्रीष्ठन यमञ्चरायान्या

Thus [Chandrakīrti] affixes to "not produced" the qualification "in reality."

स्यार्श्वम्यादिः द्वादिः क्षेत्रः स्वरः स्वर देशा स्वरः स्व स्वरः स

The Madhyamakāvatāra (Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way", VI.113) also says:

Just as these things, pots and so forth, do not exist in reality

But do exist for worldly renown,

So it is for all things.

5

10

15

20

25

Thus it does not [absurdly] follow that they are like the son of a barren woman.

# विश्वास्त्री विश्वास्त्र विश्वास्त

Thus since [Chandrakīrti] said that all internal and external things do not exist in reality but do exist conventionally, it is not the case that he did not affix the qualification "ultimately" to the object to be negated.

# 

In brief, if you do not at all assert the affixing of the qualification "ultimately" to the object to be negated, then you have no way to make a differentiation of the two truths, saying, "Ultimately, it is such and such; conventionally, it is such and such."

## ने रद् नदि नद् अपाद के मार क्षा गुर अपाद क्रिया विकास के मार के म

Since such a Mādhyamika is not explained anywhere, it is only a wrong idea.

The refutation in Chandrakīrti's *Prasannapadā* (*Clear Words*) of affixing the qualification "ultimately" to the object to be negated is in the context of refuting production from self, not in the context of mere production. This is very clear in that commentary.

### तह्यात्रम्थात्यश्रामुद्रा

Also, it is like the statement in Chandrakīrti's Madhaymakāvatārabhāṣya ([Auto]commentary on the Supplement to (Nāgārjuna's) "Treatise on the Middle Way").<sup>92</sup>

# क्रिंच'न्चेंब'क्केंब'हुन्यर'अ'अईन्यर चन्या'यश्चायांधेव वेशक्केंरक्केंच्याचायांधेव'र्वे।

The master [Nāgārjuna] refuted production [from self] in general without using a qualification saying, "There is no production from self."

# बेशमञ्जूदशयास्त्रमः धेवार्वे।

10

15

20

The use of the qualification "ultimately" by one [i.e., Bhāvaviveka] who makes the distinction, "Things are not produced from self *ultimately* because of existing, like one having sentience," is, I think, a senseless qualification.

# 

Therefore, the differentiation between Svātantrika-Mādhyamika and Prāsangika-Mādhyamika is not made by way of whether or not they affix the qualification "ultimately" to the object to be negated.

# रदानी दें विश्वास्त रायती रायती सामित स्थानी स्थान स्थान स्थानी स्थान स्

Rather, there is a difference in whether or not they refute conventionally inherent existence, that is to say, an establishment [of objects] by way of their own entities.

Hence, when refuting an inherent existence, or establishment [of objects] by way of their own entities with regard to internal and external phenomena, according to the Prāsaṅgikas, it is not necessary newly to add on a qualification such as "ultimately", "in reality", or "truly".

This is because if an inherent existence, that is, an establishment [of objects] by way of their own entities did exist, it would have to be established as an ultimate and so forth.

This is commentary on VI.12.

# र्ट्य विश्वर्ष्ट्रियः विश्वर्षेत्रः विश्वरेत्रः विश्वरेत्रः विश्वर्षेत्रः विश्वर्षेत्रः विश्वरेत्रः विश्वरेत्रः विश्वरेत्रः विश्वर्षेत्रः विश्वरेत्रः विश्वरेते विश्वरेत्रः विश्वरेते विश्वरे

According to the Svātantrikas, if one does not affix "ultimately" and so forth to those they cannot be refuted, whereby they affix "ultimately", "in reality", or "truly".

# र्वेत्र गुर क्रें त्याया क्रिया मा क्रिया मा क्रिया मा स्था क्रिया मा स्था क्रिया मा स्था मा स्था क्रिया मा स्था क्री क्रिय मा स्था क्रिय मा स्था क्रिया मा स्था क्रिय मा स्था

However, neither Mādhyamika asserts that one can refute production, cessation, bondage, release, and so forth without affixing some qualification such as "ultimately", "established by way of its own entity", and so forth.

### 10 र्देन र्देन द्यापमा सेन प्रते र्देन मार पीन स्रुधान

What is the meaning of "does not exist ultimately" [that is, "does not exist as a highest object"]?

## 

With regard to this, "object" is an object of knowledge, and "highest" means supreme; [a highest object] is a common locus of both.

# 15 षदः व द्रायः व ते श्रे हिंगा षे प्रेश्वा षेव त्या देवे दि द्वाव साम्रायः षेव प्रश्ना देव द्वारा श्री

In another way, "highest" refers to a non-conceptual exalted wisdom and because of being the object (*don*) or object (*yul*) of that, it is the object of the highest.

# षदःवःर्देवःद्रअःषःअर्देवःशुअःतुःर्हेषाश्चःपदेःश्चेःर्हेषाःषेःवेश्वःदेःददःहेशःशुअश्वरःपदेःवेशःस्यःपःर्देवःद्रअःयःवेशःग्वःश्ले

In yet another way, the wisdom concordant with the non-conceptual exalted wisdom directly realizing the ultimate is called the ultimate.

## वर्देरवे अवार्श्वम्याप्तम् वित्रप्राप्य वे विद्यूराय सेव। ।

[Bhāvaviveka's Madhyamakahrdaya (Essence of the Middle Way, III.26)] says:

Earth and so forth Are not elements ultimately.

#### 25 विश्वायदे दिवीयायम् हेंगावी दिवस्य या स्था

20

Commenting on this, his Tarkajvālā (Blaze of Reasoning) says:

# र्देन'न्यायालेबान्चायायार्देन'लेबान्चायाने'लेबायमान्चायायीन्याये स्वीमार्देन'ने यहण्यायमान्चायायीन्यान्यायीन्य यदे श्राक्षेत्रार्थे ।

Regarding the term "highest-object" it is an "object" because of being something to be known; synonyms are "something to be examined", or "something to be understood".

## ५स'य'लेब'चु'य'वे'सर्केग'छेब'चु'यदे'र्क्षग'गे'ङ्क्ष'णेव'र्वे। ।

"Highest" is a verbal term meaning "supreme".

# र्देवः द्रमः बेषः यश्चः यः वैः देः देवः षयः षोवः यः द्रमः यदयः षोवः यश्चः देवः द्रमः यदि।

Brought together into the compound "highest-object", because of being something that is an object and also the highest, it is the highest-object.

## षद्द्वद्वाद्वाद्वर्षेत्रक्षेत्रक्षः व्यवस्थात्रेत्वर्षेत्रक्षात्रव्यत्वर्षेत्रक्षेत्रप्वत्वर्षेत्रक्षेत्रप्वत्व

In another way, it means "object of the highest". Because [emptiness] is the object of the highest, a non-conceptual exalted wisdom, it is the object of the highest [consciousness].\

# ष्पर्यत्रित्राच्याप्त्र्यस्य व्यास्त्रे देवत्यायाहेष्व्यायात्त्रः हेवात्यायात्त्रः हेवात्यायात्त्रः हेवात्यायात्त्रः हित्रवात्यायात्त्रः हेवात्यायात्त्रः हित्रवात्यायात्त्रः हित्रवायात्त्रः हित्

## 15 বিশ্বাস্থ্রেম্থা

5

10

20

In another way, it means that which is "concordant with the ultimate". Because that ultimate exists for a wisdom that is concordant with [direct] realization of the ultimate, it is said to be concordant with the ultimate.

## र्देवर्नअप्यर्नेम्र्लेन्प्यःअप्लेवर्लेक्यप्यवअप्रेन्रेन्नेक्यप्यहेन्द्र्यत्रेर्द्वर्नअप्यन्तेर्ध्वेश्वर्नेर्लेवर्ने

"Ultimate" in the statement "does not exist for the ultimate" or "non-existent [ultimately]" is the latter [of these three meanings], for that same text [Bhāvaviveka's *Tarkajvālā (Blaze of Reasoning)*] says:

#### रे'हेर'यश

र्देन र्देन दश्याय ने ग्राम द्वा क्षेत्र वश्य अपन्त प्राप्त वश्य विषय

[Qualm:] The ultimate is beyond all [conceptual] awarenesses.

<sup>్</sup>రేశ్రాన్లలు don dam pa, paramārtha, "highest object"

## <u> इर्देश चॅदे र्दे चं के दादा विश्व के के के दिख्य के दाश दे दे क्षेत्र द्वा मारा के दाय से देव के दाय के दाय</u>

The refutation of an entityness of things is an object of letters. Thus, for that reason, is it not the case that that refutation does not exist?

[Answer.] There are two types of ultimate. One of these is supramundane, operating without [conceptual] activity, non-contaminated, without elaborations.

यात्रहेगाहेत्यति भेशालेश्वान्याहेश्वान्यान्याहे । यात्रहेगाहेत्यति भेशालेश्वान्याहेश्

The second involves [conceptual] elaborations and is called a pure mundane exalted wisdom; it is concordant with the collections of merit and wisdom and operates with [conceptual] activity.

यदैर-दे'द्रअप्चउत्यवदे'खुद्प्यर-वेद्-दुःच्रबुद्यवशकेशयाओदःदें। ।

#### ন্বিশ্বামানুহমানহা

5

10

15

Here, since this [latter types] is held as the qualification of the thesis, "does not exist ultimately," there is no fallacy.

This is to be taken as referring to the wisdoms of hearing and thinking properly analyzing reality and above; it does not refer only to a Noble's [exalted wisdom of] subsequent attainment.

#### न्तुः अःश्वरः यः यश्यायारः।

5

10

15

20

Also, Kamalaśıla's Madhyamakāloka (Illumination of the Middle Way) says:94

# यादायदार्देवाद्यायप्रञ्जे पायोदारेकानुः पायार्थेयाकायाञ्च कायादे त्यादारे त्यादार्देवादी त्यदे स्थितायप्रत्दे द

The statement, "Production does not exist ultimately," is asserted to mean the following:

# 

All consciousnesses arisen from hearing, thinking, and meditating on reality<sup>95</sup> are non-erroneous subjects. Therefore, they are called "ultimate" because of being the ultimate of those [consciousnesses].

# 

There is a difference [among them] in terms of directness or indirectness, but by the power of thought of those [consciousnesses], all these things are to be known as only not produced. Therefore, the phrase, "Production does not exist ultimately," is explained as meaning that these are not established by a correct consciousness as produced.

# देश्वात् १२६ द्वात् स्वात् प्रात्म श्रेष्ठ प्रात्म स्र प्रात्म स्

Therefore, the phrase, "Production does not exist ultimately," is explained as meaning that these are not established by a correct consciousness as produced.

### वेशमञ्जूदशयान्दरअञ्चनयमञ्जूदर्दे।।

This appears to accord with [Bhāvaviveka's] statement [in the Tarkajvālā (Blaze of Reasoning)].

P5287, vol. 101, 83.5.1-83.5.4. Dzong-ka-ba's citation of the passage differs from how it appears in the Peking edition on two points: The Peking edition merely says "consciousnesses arisen from correct hearing, thinking, and meditating (yang dag pa'i thos pa dang bsam pa dang bsgom pa las byung ba'i shes pa), whereas Dzong-ka-ba has added in the term don so that the passage reads, "consciousnesses arisen from hearing, thinking, and meditating on reality (yang dag pa'i don thos pa dang bsam pa dang bsgom pa las byung ba'i shes pa). Also, the Peking edition merely says, "by the power of those" (da dag gi dbang gis) whereas Dzong-ka-ba has added bsam pa'i to give the more awkward reading of "by the power of thought of those" (de dag gi bsam pa'i dbang gis). The use of bsam pa'i dbang gis is mirrored in the passage Dzong-ka-ba cites next from Kamalaśila's Madhyamakāla 'kārapañjikā (Commentary on the Difficult Points of (Śāntarakśita's) "Ornament for the Middle Way").

<sup>95</sup> ८५५५५ प्रतास्त्री प्रकार dag pa'i don

## <u> ५चु:स्राक्तुत्र:ग्री:५गाद:दशेव्य:व्यक्ष:ग्राटः।</u>

5

10

15

20

Also, Kamalaśıla's Madhyamakāla kārapañjikā (Commentary on the Difficult Points of (Śāntarak ita's) "Ornament for the Middle Way") says:

To the qualm, "In what way is it that things do not exist inherently?" [Śāntarakśita] said, "In reality" refers to an entity of reality", an object realized by an inference operating through the power of the thing.

This is the same as saying that they are empty when analyzed with [the wisdom penetrating] reality.

This explains the statements "in reality", "ultimately", and so forth.

षद्वायद्वायदे विश्वायार्थे वाषद्वायात्वायात्वा स्वायात्वा स्वायात्वा स्वायात्वा स्वायात्वा स्वायात्वा स्वायात्व

In another way, only the consciousnesses [realizing] reality are expressed by the terms "reality" and so forth because [reality] is their object of observation.

षदः द्वाः प्रतिः विश्वः प्रतिः प्रवादिः प्रवादः विश्वः प्रतिः प्रवादः विश्वः प्रतिः विश्वः प्रतिः विश्वः प्रतिः विश्वः प्रतिः प्रवादिः प्रवादेः प्रवादिः प्रवादे । प्रवादिः प्रवादे प्रवादिः प्रवादिः प्रवादे । प्

That things do not exist inherently is in terms of the thought of a consciousness [realizing] reality, not in terms of a conventional consciousness.

The affixing of the qualification " in reality" and so forth with regard to non-inherent existence is set forth many times also in Bhāvaviveka's *Prajñāpradīpa (Lamp for Nāgārjuna's "Wisdom")* and in his *Tarkajvālā (Blaze of Reasoning)*.

<sup>97</sup> दे। वित्र केंद्र केंद्र

<sup>96</sup> पार:५ग:घर:द्या yang dag par na

## खुन्यमन्तुःम्याचुन्यर्केःकृष्यदेःदब्वेयायाने**ब**ामयाङ्केवासे।य**बा**

In particular, the *Prajňāpradīpa* (*Lamp for Nāgārjuna's "Wisdom"*) commenting on the fifteenth chapter [of Nāgārjuna's *Mūlamadhyamikakārika* (*Treatise on the Middle Way*)] says:

[Objection:] If things do not have [their own] entityness, how could they be things? If they are things, then they are not without [their own] entityness. Thus there is the fault that you are mistakenly denying those objects through just those [words, "do not have their own entityness"] in the thesis.

10 **직**氧

15

5

As an answer to the objection that one has the fallacy of contradicting one's own words in the thesis, "Things do not have [their own] entityness," that same text [Bhāvaviveka's *Prajñāpradīpa (Lamp for Nāgārjuna's "Wisdom")*] says:<sup>98</sup>

Because we do not have the thesis that things do not have [their own] entityness, having asserted them as having [their own] entityness ultimately, we do not mistakenly deny the object of our thesis.

Thus, since this is not a case of the meaning of the reason not being established, we have no fault here.

20 ब्रेश्चर्न्द्रशर्ये द्वस्रश्चर्त्व द्वस्य प्रस्ति विद्यास्य वि

Because [Bhāvaviveka] asserts that there is no mistaken denial due to his asserting that things do not have [their own] entityness *ultimately*, it is clear that he asserts that it would be a mistaken denial if they did not have [an own] entityness, that is, if they were not established by way of their own entityness, *conventionally*.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>98</sup> P5253, vol. 95, 210.2.4-210.2.5. Dzong-ka-ba has omitted an intervening line from 210.2.5-210.2.6 and pulled up from 210.2.6 the concluding phrase "therefore, we have no fault here."

### षर-दे-छेद-सम्रा

5

10

15

That same text [Bhāvaviveka's Prajñāpradīpa (Lamp for Nāgārjuna's "Wisdom")] also says:

र्नेत्रप्रायम्बरम्भि प्रदेशस्य म्बर्भार्ट्सं केष्ठ्रप्राय केष्ठ्रप्राय केष्ठ्रप्राय प्रदेश प्रायम्बर्धः विष्ठ्य प्रायम्बर्धः विष्ठ्यः विष्यः विष्ठ्यः विष्ठ्यः विष्ठ्यः विष्ठ्यः विष्ठ्यः विष्ठ्यः विष्ठ्यः विष्ठ्यः विष्ठ्यः विष्यः विष्ठ्यः विष्ठ्यः विष्यः विष्ठ्यः विष्ठ्यः विष्ठ्यः विष्ठ्यः विष्ठ्यः विष्ठ्यः विष्यः विष्ठ्यः विष्

Ultimately, internal things do not have [an own] entityness because of being produced and because the special expression, this dependence, has dependence.

ร्ये र त्र 🍇 सामान के सामान कर के सामान के सामान के सामान के सामान के सामान के सामा

For example, it is like the humans and so forth emanated by a conjuror.

बेश्चर्यायवेत्रावर्षेषायात्यार्देत्रप्रथायवे । हुन्यमादेशायमार्श्वे स्यवे हुन्यमार्

Thus [Bhāvaviveka] definitely affixed the qualification "ultimately" in the refutation of inherent existence.

देःयार्देवःद्रश्रायमःश्रेद्रान्देवःविःषेवःश्चंत्रायाः हैःक्ष्रमःषेव। श्चंत्रायाविवःदुःद्रम्यतिः मेण्यायाविवःद् यमःश्चात्रायायायान्तेदः स्वात्राद्वेदः यदिः स्वात्रात्वः स्वात्रायान्ते ।

With regard to this, all these masters agree that the meaning of something's not existing ultimately is that it is not established as existing by a reasoning consciousness when analyzed with reasoning analyzing properly what its mode of being is.

Therefore, even in the texts of this master [Bhāvaviveka], when positing conventionalities, he says such things as, "Without engaging in analysis that accords with perception of suchness...," and, when refuting inherent existence, he frequently says, "...does not exist when analyzed with reasoning." Thus, these [statements] and those of the former [masters] are similar.

5

र्वत् गुरः स्रामि देविका मुद्याया व्याप्य क्षेत्र निर्देष्ट स्वयः स्वयः निर्द्यतः स्वयः स

However, they do not agree as to whether something that is established by way of its own entity need or need not be asserted as able to withstand analysis by reasoning analyzing the mode of being. As has been explained extensively above, the two masters [Buddhapālita and Chandrakīrti] assert that something that is established by way of its own entity is necessarily able to withstand analysis by reasoning analyzing reality, whereby it necessarily must also be established ultimately.